

SOCIO-POLITICAL ISSUES IN THE SELECTED SPY NOVELS

A THESIS SUBMITTED TO

SAVITRIBAI PHULE PUNE UNIVERSITY, PUNE

FOR THE AWARD OF DEGREE OF

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY (PH.D.)

IN ENGLISH

BY

GAIKWAD RAJENDRA NIVRUTTI

KEDGAON, PUNE

UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF

PRIN. DR. RAJESH S. LATANE

C.S.M.'S ARTS AND COMMERCE COLLEGE,

CHAKAN, KHED, DIST.- PUNE

RESEARCH CENTRE

DEPARTMENT OF ENGLISH, C.T. BORA COLLEGE,

SHIRUR-GHODNADI, DIST. PUNE

FEBRUARY - 2021

Socio -Political Issues in the Selected Spy Novels

A Thesis Submitted to



Savitribai Phule Pune University, Pune

(Formerly University of Pune)

For the Award of the Degree of
Doctor of Philosophy (Ph. D.)

In English

By

Gaikwad Rajendra Nivrutti

Kedgaon, Pune

Under the Supervision of

Prin. Dr. Rajesh S. Latane

C. S. M.'s Arts and Commerce College,

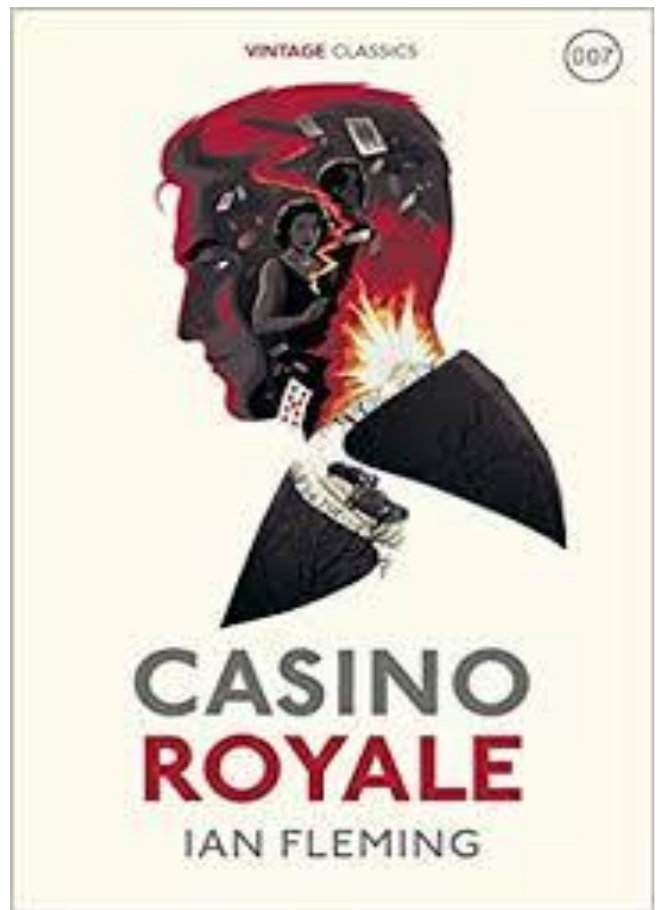
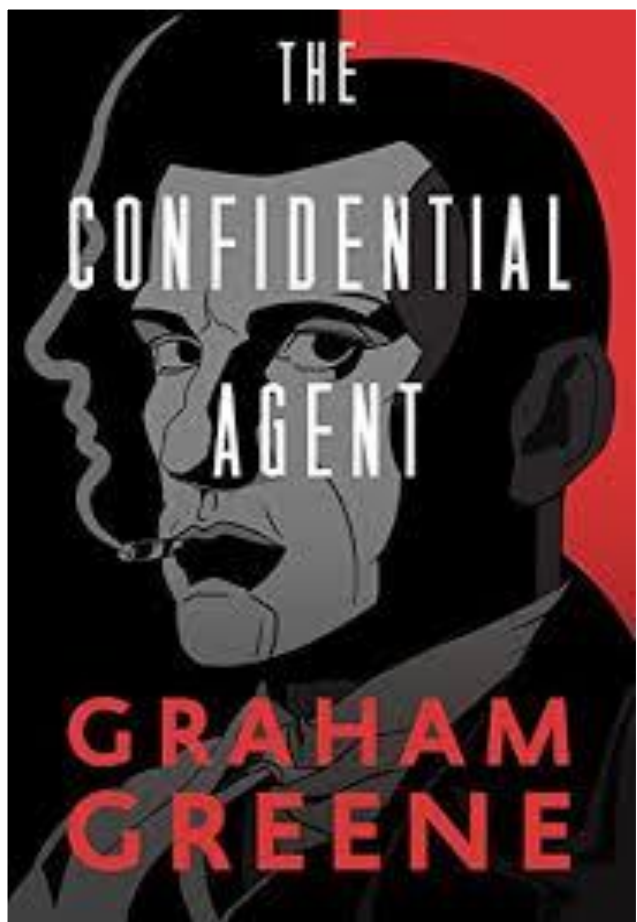
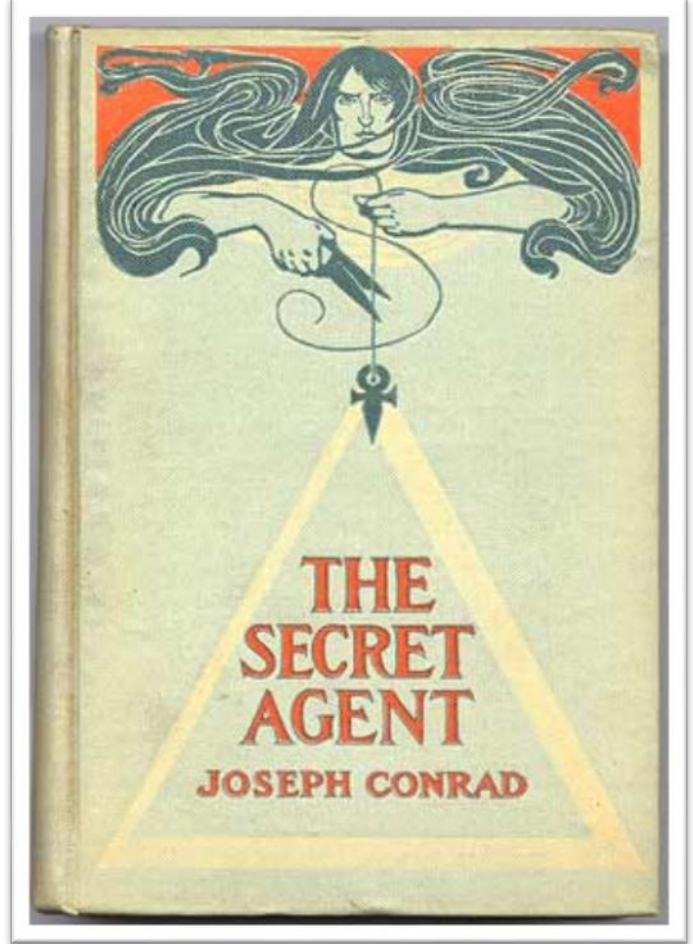
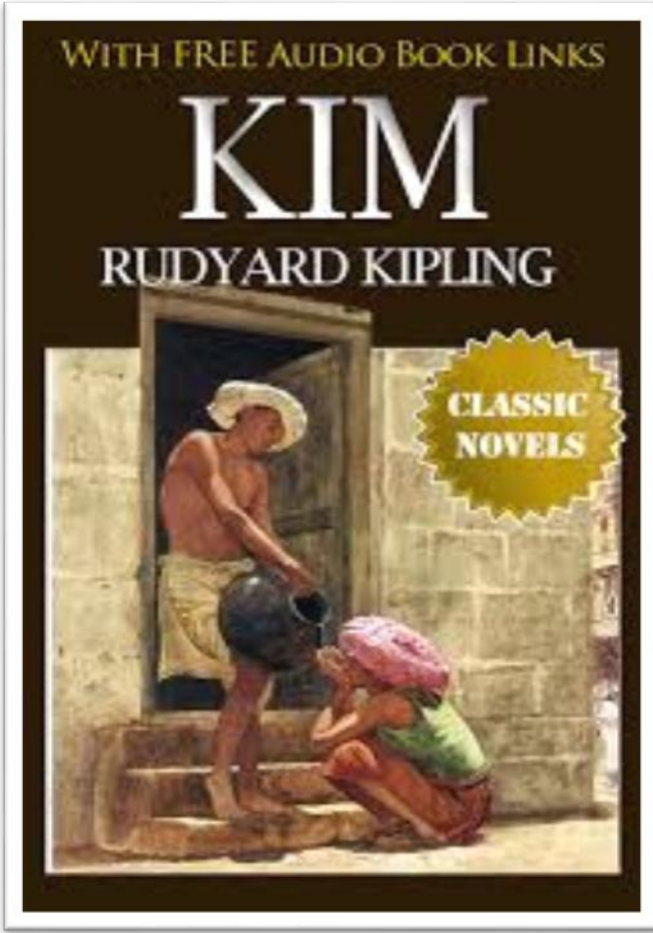
Chakan, Khed, Dist.- Pune

Research Centre

C. T. Bora College, Department of English,

Shirur- Ghodnadi, Dist. – Pune

February-2021



CERTIFICATE

This is to certify that the thesis entitled '**Socio-Political Issues in the Selected Spy Novels**' is a record of original work carried out by **Gaikwad Rajendra Nivrutti** under my supervision at Savitribai Phule Pune University, Pune, Research Centre C.T. Bora College, Department of English, Shirur - Ghodnadi, Dist.- Pune. Such material has been obtained from other sources been duly acknowledged in the thesis. No part of the thesis has been presented for any degree, diploma, fellowship or other similar titles of recognition from any other University or Institution. I consider this work worthy for the award of the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in English.



Dr. Rajesh S. Latane
(Research Supervisor)

Principal,

C.S.M.'s Arts and Commerce

College, Chakan, Tal. -Khed, Dist – Pune

Principal

C.S.M's Arts & Commerce College
Chakan, Tal-Khed, Dist-Pune.



Place: Pune

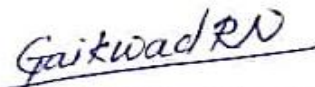
Date: 25.02.2021

DECLARATION

I hereby declare that, the thesis entitled '**Socio-Political Issues in the Selected Spy Novels**' completed and written by me under the supervision of **Dr. Rajesh S. Latane**, has not been previously formed the basis for the award of Degree or Diploma or other similar title of this or any other university or examining body. I further declare that the material obtained from other sources has been duly acknowledged in the thesis.

Date: 25.02.2021

Place: Pune



Gaikwad Rajendra Nivrutti

Research Student

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

I am deeply indebted to *Prin. Dr. Rajesh S. Latane, Arts and Commerce College, Chakan, Khed, Pune*, my research supervisor, who has inspired me for completing the present research work. He has ably guided me for completing the research work and always treated me very well and his affection has relieved me of every psychological burden.

There are four spy novels of different writers, which are very complex to understand, but *Dr. Rajesh Latane's* sharp insight and perfect guidance has helped me to solve all the problems. Further mention must be made of *Prin. Dr. K.C. Mohite, and former Prin. Nandkumar Nikam, C.T. Bora College and Director of the Research Center, Dist- Pune*. They have provided me with academics, technical and moral support, which is as invaluable memory for me. I am deeply indebted to *Prin. Dr. G. R. Nimbalkar, Netaji Shikshan Sanstha's Subhash Baburao Kul College, Kedgaon, Tal- Daund, Pune*, for his encouragement and moral support for my research work. My initial enthusiasm to do research became fruitful due to the encouragement support, and compassion of my former research supervisor *Dr. Suresh T. Kharat, retired an Associate Professor of New Arts, and Commerce College, Ahmadnagar*, I express my deep sense of gratitude for him. I wish to convey my sincere thanks to *Dr. Janardhan Nair, Head, Department of English, C. T. Bora College, Shirur Ghodnadi, Dr. R. S. Jain, former, Head, Department of English, C.T. Bora College, Shirur, Pune* for their timely help and continual support. I would like to show my greatest appreciation to *Dr. Ashok Chaskar, former Dean, faculty of Art's, Fine Art's and performing Art's, Savitribai Phule, Pune University, Pune*. I am deeply indebted to *Dr. Arjun Jadhav, Ferguson College, Pune*, for their guidance and valuable support.

I also a debt to the Library staff of Jaykar Library, Savitribai Phule University of Pune, Ramesh Mohan Library, English and Foreign Languages University, (EFLU)

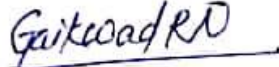
Hyderabad, and British Council Library, Pune, Tuljaram Chaturchand College Library, Baramati and Subhash Baburao Kul College Library, Kedgaon as they helped me a lot to complete my research work. I wish to extend my thanks to *Dr. Brijesh Tambe, Dr. Suraj Sawant, Dr. Belle, Department of English, C. T. Bora College, Shirur, Pune.*

I sincerely thank to *Dr. Janardhan Nair*, for the patience and care with which they conducted the Ph.D Course Work, So, as to provide me with a good background for independent research. My humble thanks go to my nearest and dearest friends such as *Prof. Prashant Shinde, Dr. Vijay Punekar, Dr. Sachin Gadekar, Dr. Tushar Kamble, Dr. Prashant Kasbe, Dr. Umesh Narute, Dr. Suhas Raut, Prof. Vijay Ghadage, and Prof. Nilesh Shitole, Dr. Ganesh Sonawane, Dr. Sanjay Zagade* with whom I spent wonderful time at Ph.D Coursework.

I am also grateful to the teaching and non-teaching staff of Subhash Baburao Kul College, Kedgaon, the teaching and non-teaching staff of C. T. Bora College, Shirur, Pune, as well as the similar personnel of Chakan College, Chakan, Dist- Khed, and Pune.

I wish to thank to my wife *Archana* without her co-operation, I would not have completed this work. This list will be incomplete without the mention of the Pillars of my life, my dearest beloved parents- *Aai and Taty*a and all my family members who always backed me up with their blessings. It will be injustice if I forget to mention my precious diamond *Sahil*, my dearest and handsome son.

I thank to those names I might have forgotten to enlist here, who have directly or indirectly helped me to complete my research.


Gaikwad Rajendra Nivrutti
Kedgaon, Pune

CONTENTS

1. Certificate	I
2. Declaration	II
3. Acknowledgements	III-IV
4. Contents	V-IX
5. Abstract	X-XV
CONTENTS	
6. CHAPTER I --- INTRODUCTION	1--26
1.0. Introduction	
1.1. Scientific Development and the Emergence of Idealism, Socialism and Liberalism during the Victorian Period	
1.2. Emergence of Capitalism and Marxism	
1.3. Inflicting Influences of two World Wars and decline of Civilization	
1.4. General Socio-Political Issues	
1.4.1. Inequality	
1.4.2. Poverty	
1.4.3. Corruption	
1.4.4. Criminal Justice System	
1.4.5. Communalism	
1.4.6. Illiteracy	
1.4.7. Violence against Women	
1.4.8. Racism	
1.4.9. Terrorism	
1.5. Novels	
1.5.1. Brief Summaries of the Selected Novels	
1.6. Aims and Objectives of Research	

- 1.7. The Significance of the Study
- 1.8. Pedagogical Implications of the Study
- 1.9. Justification for the Present Study
- 1.10. Social Significance of the Study
- 1.11. Scope and Limitations of the Study
 - A) Scope for the Spy Novelists during the Modern Period
 - B) Limitations
- 1.12. Research Methodology
- 1.13. Hypothesis
- 1.14. Conclusion

7. CHAPTER II --- THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK

27--47

- 2.0. Introduction
- 2.1. Background of the Spy fiction in English Literature
 - 2.2. Vedic Cosmic Order and the growth of Security System
- 2.3. Origin of Secret Services
- 2.4. Summary

Works Cited

8. CHAPTER III --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF RUDYARD KIPLING'S *KIM* IN THE CONTEXT OF SOCIO- POLITICAL PERSPECTIVES

48--78

- 3.0. Introduction
- 3.1. Religious Diversity and Underlined Racism
- 3.2 Western Superiority
- 3.3. Agents of Imperialism
 - 3.3.1. Mehbub Ali
 - 3.3.2 Kim
 - 3.3.3 Colonel Creighton
 - 3.3.4. Lurgan Sahib
 - 3.3.5. Babu

- 3.4. Social Conditions
- 3.4.1. Contrast: Respect and Hate for Religion
- 3.4.2. Corruption and Economic Exploitation
- 3.4.3. Imperial Reformations in India
- 3.4.4. Marginalized Women / People
- 3.5. Conclusion
- 3.6. Notes and References
- 3.7. Web References

9. CHAPTER IV --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF JOSEPH CONRAD'S *THE SECRET AGENT* IN THE CONTEXT OF SOCIO-POLITICAL PERSPECTIVES **79--102**

- 4.0. Introduction
- 4.1. Joseph Conrad and Modernism
- 4.2. A Brief Summary of, *The Secret Agent*
- 4.3. Political and Social Background of *The Secret Agent*
- 4.4. Major Socio-Political Issues in *The Secret Agent*: A Critical Analysis
- 4.5. Identity Crisis in *The Secret Agent*
- 4.6. Exploitation of Marginals in *The Secret Agent*-
- 4.7. Social Injustice in *The Secret Agent*
- 4.8. Political Issues in *The secret Agent*
- 4.9. Summary –
- 4.10. Major Findings
- 4.11. Works cited

10. CHAPTER V --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF GRAHAM GREENE'S *THE CONFIDENTIAL AGENT* IN THE CONTEXT OF SOCIO- POLITICAL PERSPECTIVES **103--135**

- 5.0. Introduction –
- 5.1. Graham Greene as a Political Novelist
- 5.2. Greene's Novels and Entertainments
- 5.3. Greene as a Proponent of a New Trend in Literature

- 5.4. Element of Humanism in Greene's Fiction
- 5.5. Analysis and Interpretation of Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* in Brief
- 5.6. Analysis and Interpretations of Socio- Political Issues in Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent*
- 5.7. Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* as a Thriller
- 5.8. Consequences of War Presented in Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent*
- 5.9. Element of Humanism in *The Confidential Agent*
- 5.10. Examples of Ironical situations in *The Confidential Agent*
- 5.11. Summary
- 5.12. Works Cited

11. CHAPTER VI --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF IAN FLEMING'S *CASINO ROYALE* IN THE CONTEXT OF SOCIO-POLITICAL PERSPECTIVES **136--165**

- 6.0. Introduction –
 - 6.1.1. Cold War
 - 6.1.2. Cold War and World Politics
 - 6.2.1. Arm Race
 - 6.2.2. Cultural Impact
 - 6.2.3. World Economy after Cold War
 - 6.2.4. International Politics
- 6.3. Social Issues
 - 6.3.1. Male Dominance
 - 6.3.2. Misogyny-
- 6.4. Strategic Conspiracies
- 6.5. The Decline of Great Britain
- 6.6. Rich and Ravish Lifestyle
- 6.7. Greed and Corruption
- 6.8. Deceit
- 6.9. Conclusion

6.10. Works Cited

6.11. Web links

12. CHAPTER VII --- CONCLUSION **166--182**

7.0. Introduction

7.1. *The Secret Agent*: A Perfectly Constructed Spy Novel –

7.2. *Kim*: Kipling’s Sarcastic Comments on Social, Political, Religious and Cultural Issues existing in India

7.3. *The Confidential Agent*: An Entertaining Thriller Novel

7.4. *Casino Royale*: Espionage, Conspiracy and Deceit as an underling part of Cold War

7.5. Major Findings

7.6. Further Avenues for Research in Spy fiction

13. BIBLIOGRAPHY **183-187**

ABSTRACT

Chapter I – Introduction:

Spy fiction is a type of fiction which is skillfully plotted and contains well-drawn characters and exciting and thrilling actions. The striking features of spy novels are a high degree of suspense, tensions and curiosity. It is a specialized form of fiction. It is extremely authentic in all technical details as well as social, cultural and political issues presented in it. Conspiracy, deception, exploitation, panic and a genuine threat of stealing secret matters and documents are favourite themes of spy novels. The use of spies had been a regular practice in England since the sixteenth century. There have been spies as long as there have wars and war interests. Laws and rules are definitely necessary to keep the darker side of human nature in order. The conflicts between good and evils according to the renowned British novelist William Golding are age-old. Along with the changes in human nature and the relations among different nations necessary changes had been introduced in the use of spies. In the 20th century, there emerged innumerable service agencies and the use of police organizations being operated all over the world.

The spy as a literary genre appeared before the world wars. At the same time modern intelligence services started to appear. The rise of spy novel can be associated with the perception of national insecurity in the time of changing international relations. The spy novel as a genre of literature is difficult to define because its borders are not clear. They fall between crime novels and adventure novels. The espionage can be considered as the use of spies to detect secret information about country and the systems of organization. The western thinkers conceived human life as bound and resulted by a definite social order, which was raised to the level of 'Divine Law.' Social, political, economical, and cultural, issues at the national as well as international levels are genuine themes of spy novels. The researcher has chosen social, cultural and political analysis as a powerful instrument for understanding how countries work and what might be done to help to work in a better way. The researcher has chosen four spy novels for his social, political, and cultural analysis.

Through this powerful analytical technique the researcher proves that the social, political, and cultural issues are the aspects of the spy novel.

Chapter II -Theoretical Framework:

The chapter two is a theoretical framework. It prepares a kind of base for the discussion, explanation and analysis for the remaining chapters. In this chapter, the researcher has presented the theory of spy fiction. It includes necessary information related to spy thriller, and various types of espionage employed by the states from 16th century to the present time in various countries. It extensively discusses how espionage, intelligence, investigation, prosecution etc. have been formed as a part of the state security. It extensively refers to the Aryan institutions, cosmic order, and kingship the concept of 'Danda.' It further presents 'Vedic Cosmic Order' as well as the origin and growth of security systems. It also includes the origin of secret services. Overall, it prepares the foundation for the discussion, analysis and explanations of the selected spy novels in the remaining chapters.

Chapter III- Critical Analysis and Interpretations of Rudyard Kipling's *Kim* in the Context of Socio- Political Perspectives:

The first renowned spy novel selected for the analysis of social, political and cultural issues is Rudyard Kipling's *Kim*. The novel necessarily represents Indian cultural, social and political situations existing during the British regime in India. Colonel Creighton represents the colonial knowledge and power whereas other character's nature represent the ignorant, superstitious world of people against the background of passive battleground over which the imperial power struggles for its safe existence. The game of climbing on the cannon explicitly represents the realities of then India, Where racial and religious race was at the top. The novel accurately pictures the social situations of India during the British rule. In *Kim*, Abdullah and Chota Lal represent three different situations, social background and economical situation of Indian society. The social conflict of races and religions has been critically analyzed and elaborately explained. The researcher has brought out the clutches of religious beliefs on the common men and women of India. He has also brought out the underlying distinction between the rulers and the people being ruled,

as two different races. *Kim* is a perfect spy and helps colonel Creighton. The researcher has clearly brought out a number of castes, religions and social structures presented by Kipling in his spy novel entitled, *Kim*. The researcher has analyzed the socio-political issues represented by Rudyard Kipling in his novel *Kim*.

Chapter IV- Critical Analysis and Interpretations of Joseph Conrad's *The Secret Agent* in the Context of Socio-Political Perspectives:

The researcher has chosen a renowned novelist, Joseph Conrad's illustrated novel entitled, *The Secret Agent* for the critical analysis of social, political, and cultural problems existing at the end of the nineteenth century and during the twentieth century. Joseph Conrad occupies a very significant place through his versatile personality and scholarly career. He has given an emphasis on the striking social, political, and cultural issues of his time. He himself has undergone strange experiences of the world. He could seriously understand the sudden transition in the civilization with its entire social, political, cultural, ethnic, moral, and religious scenarios.

The researcher has analyzed and critically explained various themes like exploitation of marginals, political extremism, social injustices, anarchism and terrorism, betrayals and identity crisis presented in *The Secret Agent*. He has also analyzed the two worlds presented by Conrad- the world of Mr.Verloc, a domestic expectations and emotions in the family relationship and the seedy underworld of London's radical politics in which revolutionaries and anarchists work against the mainstream of western civilization. Conrad explicitly reveals his disapproval of the established governments in his secretary Toodles and British police. In most of his novels, Conrad has juxtaposed political issues against human issues. He could do the same even in his *The Secret Agent* very successfully. The present novel is set in the very heart of the western civilization.

Like social and political issues, exploitation of marginals is an important part of *The Secret Agent*. Mr.Verloc is exploited by a high ranking diplomat of foreign embassy- Mr. Vladimir. He uses Mr. Verloc, a minor shopkeeper to blow up the Greenwich Meridian Observatory so that, the revolutionaries would be blamed. Mr.Verloc gets an idea of using innocent, helpless Stevie to place the bomb, because

he would not be suspected. The researcher has clearly explained this hierarchy of exploiting the marginals which has been successfully presented by Conrad.

Chapter V- Critical Analysis and Interpretations of Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* in the Context of Socio- Political Perspectives:

The next illustrated novel, the researcher has chosen for his analysis and an explanation is Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent*. Greene's novels are united by the themes of commitment- political, social, moral and emotional in the face of oppressive realities. The present novel probes into the problems of good and evil, the strange misery in man's life and the complexities of human actions.

The agent of the title is referred to throughout the novel simply as D., where as his opponent is named as L. These two men are on different sides, but they understand one another. Greene has named them as D. and L. because he didn't wish to localize their conflict. The novel clearly displays the contemporary social and political situations and entertains the readers. It contains an unhappy situation of shootings, scrapes, chases and confrontations. The novel contains political-terrorism, ideological and suicide bombers. The researcher has analyzed and explained the social, political, cultural, materialistic situations existing during the World War II. After the devastations of the First World War, striking changes took place in England. The changes include social, cultural, psychological, political, decline of belief, loss of innocence etc. All these changes helped Fascist cause, as well as an economic empire which become unscrupulous. Consequently, it gave birth to conspiracies, distrust and betrayal at the national as well as international levels. The contrast between the bliss of prewar, social, political and cultural situations and the distastes presented by Greene has been explicitly explained by the researcher. The Second World War, the coal deal, the two parties which stand to be beneficial played significant in this novel. England as a powerful nation could exercise influence on the course of war, manipulation, conspiracy, suspicion, fear, deception, suspense, panic etc. are the striking features of *The Confidential Agent*. Cruel deaths of innocent citizens and helpless children, the murder of Else, the BBC's sensational news, use of dead man's passport, L.'s intrigues, espionages, the gangster's threat of exploding the bomb, the politics of the coal contract, imperial attitude of the British government, materialistic

tendency are equally striking characteristics of *The Confidential Agent*. All these features have been explicitly analyzed and explained in the present thesis.

Chapter VI- Critical Analysis and Interpretations of Ian Fleming's *Casino Royale* in the Context of Socio-Political Perspectives:

The fourth novel, the researcher has selected for analyzing and explaining the social, cultural and political issues is Ian Fleming's *Casino Royale*. The researcher has analyzed this illustrated novel as a representation of cold war between Russian and American allies. It also represents the bitter and cut throat race of producing weapons between the two groups of cold war to outsmart each other. It has brought out the severe influences of cold war on the overall social, cultural, economical situations of the entire world. The conflict between communism and capitalism was equally severe.

The cold war has a deep impact on the social, political, cultural and economical development of entire world. The British agent, James Bond is assigned to undertake Soviet Union at *Casino Royale* by making bankrupt. At the same time, the soviet agent is ready to clear off James Bond from his way. The researcher has elaborately explained how cold war severely affected international politics which is highly sensitive. These disturbances affected social, cultural, economical and political situations in most of the countries for almost thirty to forty years.

The researcher has brought out how the cold war became responsible for a steep competition in arms race. In order to defeat each other huge amount of money and natural resources were invested in producing military weapons and equipment which further caused the threat of nuclear war.

The researcher has also explained the deep impact of cold war on the cultural and artistic development. The tense international politics, the threat of nuclear war became common themes of spy movies, spy novels and other mediums of expressions. Economical growth of thirty countries of the world was severely affected. Women's status in general was greatly affected during the cold war. Women were being considered as a thing of beauty and a warm company that a man craves for. This attitude further gave birth to a luxurious and ravishes life style. The researcher genuinely tried his level best to analyze and explain the social, cultural, economical and political issues presented in the selected four novels.

Chapter VII- Conclusion:

To conclude, the researcher deeply realized the significance and relevance of the spy novels in the changing, social, cultural, economical, political etc. lives in general and human life in particular. Naturally, he inclined to study and analyse social, cultural, economical and political lives. After giving a thought of analyzing and explaining social, cultural, economical and political, he decided to concentrate on the spy fiction. The spy fiction is a specialized fiction. The striking characteristics of spy novels are a high degree of suspense, tension, anxieties as well as a high degree of curiosity. Espionage, deceptions, exploitations, panic, a genuine threat of stealing secret information and relevant documents of an enemy countries are the common themes of spy novels.

The researcher has selected four illustrated spy novels for his research. He has specifically concentrated on the social, cultural, economical, political etc. issues presented in the above-cited selected spy novels. Scientific discoveries, inventions and education after 1880 have changed social, cultural, economical, political etc. scenarios in European countries. The French Revolution proved to be the boon to the lower classes. They realized their rights. Education made them aware of the gap between their life and the life of the higher-class people. Naturally, the conflicts between rich and poor spread everywhere. It gave birth to capitalism and communism. The world has straight-forwardly divided between two groups- haves and has not. Increasing tensions between these two became responsible for the destruction caused by the two world wars. Joseph Conrad, Rudyard Kipling, Graham Greene, Ian Fleming and other spy novelists were quite conscious of the influences of the two world wars on social, cultural, economical, political etc. scenarios all over the world. The researcher decided to study these issues presented in the spy novels of the above-mentioned renowned novelists. He has genuinely tried to analyze and explain these issues sincerely and carefully.

Gaikwad RN

GAIKWAD RAJENDRA NIVRUTTI

(Research Student)



Latane

DR. RAJESH S. LATANE

(Research Guide)
Principal

C.S.M.'s Arts & Commerce College
Chakan, Tal-Khed, Dist-Pune.

CHAPTER I ---INTRODUCTION**01-26**

1.0. Introduction

1.1. Scientific Development and the Emergence of Idealism, Socialism
and Liberalism during the Victorian Period

1.2. Emergence of Capitalism and Marxism

1.3. Inflicting Influences of the two World Wars and Decline of
Civilization

1.4. General Socio-Political Issues

1.4.1. Inequality

1.4.2. Poverty

1.4.3. Corruption

1.4.4. Criminal Justice System

1.4.5. Communalism

1.4.6. Illiteracy

1.4.7. Violence against Women

1.4.8. Racism

1.4.9. Terrorism

1.5. Novels

1.5.1. Brief summaries of the selected novels

1.6. Statement of the Problem

1.7. Hypothesis

1.8. Aims and Objectives of Research

1.9. The Significance of the Study

1.10. Pedagogical Implications of the Study

1.11. Justification for the Present Study

1.12. Social Significance of the Study

1.13. Scope and Limitations of the Study

1.14. Research Methodology

1.15. Conclusion

Works Cited

1.0. Introduction:

The study of literature is a fascinating activity. It offers both the teachers and learner's many-fold and illustrious benefits. We care for literature primarily on account of its deep and everlasting human significance. Literature is a vital record of what human beings have seen in life, what they have experienced of it, what they thought and felt about those aspects of it which have the most immediate and enduring interests for all of us. It is fundamentally an expression of human life through the medium fashioned into the various forms of literature.

There are major as well as minor forms of literature. Poetry, drama, novel and essay are considered the major forms of literature whereas short story, one-act-play, biography, auto-biography etc. are considered minor forms of literature. Literature is a reflection of human society. It is also an interpretation of human life in general and from author's point of view in particular. Human life is never constant. It undergoes changes. Continuous changes take place in social, political, cultural, economic, environmental etc. situations. Changes also continuously take place in human behaviour, intentions, tendencies and attitudes. To accommodate new themes, literary forms have been employed by the authors. New literary forms like Spy novels, mystery novels, stream of consciousness novels, war novels, political allegories and satirical novels etc. have been written by the novelists.

Drama is a restricted form of literature. After having an extensive review of relevant literature, the researcher came to conclusion to do research on spy novels which are outcomes of the social, political, economic and cultural situations existing during the twentieth century. During the first half of the twentieth century tremendous upheavals have taken place in political, social, economic, religious and cultural situations in European society. During this period, human beings have experienced rising of capitalism and the conflicts between the Capitalism and Marxism. Mankind has experienced two world wars and severe consequences of these two world wars. The spy novels selected by the researcher explicitly reflect the existing social, political, cultural, economic, psychological etc. situations.

1.1. Scientific Development and the Emergence of Idealism, Socialism and Liberalism during the Victorian Period:

The Victorian thinkers and philosophers like Thomas Carlyle, John Ruskin, John Stuart Mill, Macaulay, George Barnard Shaw, E. M. Forster etc. advocated

socialism, idealism and liberalism in European societies during the second half of the nineteenth century. Scientific discoveries and inventions proved to be boon to mankind during this period. Science gave machines to mankind. With the help of machines, European countries could increase production of goods, clothes, and materials necessary to improve the standard of living of mankind in general. The large scale production of goods, clothes and necessary materials brought money in European countries. It is a general philosophy that everything has two aspects/ sides – positive as well as negative. Along with the scientific discoveries and inventions, the traditional religious dogmas were challenged at the end of the nineteenth century. Scientific way of thinking became popular. Religious traditions were threatened by the rationalists. The conflict between rationality and faith created confusion in the minds of common men and women. The members of the scientific, philosophical, practical, social and rationalistic movements tried their level best for balance and the benefit of mankind.

Thomas Carlyle, the thinker, educationist and prose writer, commented on social, political, educational and cultural situations existing in England during the nineteenth century through his illustrated essay entitled, *Signs of the Times* which proved to be lighthouse to people.

Mathew Arnold's illustrated book entitled, *Culture and Anarchy* is a critical commentary on social, political, educational and cultural situations existing in England during the second half of the nineteenth century. His renowned poem, entitled, *Dover Beach* explicitly reveals the conflict between rationality and faith. He argued that, once upon a time, there was a sea of faith in human society but it was found disappearing from human society. Rationality and faith are equally necessary in human life. He wanted a balance between these two. His *Culture and Anarchy* published in 1869 reflects his growing uneasiness. He advocated that the inward changes are necessary to match and control the outward changes which were taking place in England and associate countries at the end of the nineteenth century.

George Bernard Shaw, the twentieth century dramatist and thinker advocated democratic socialism and reformation through his speeches and dramas. The Fabian society was formed in 1884 to represent democratic socialism and reformation. His renowned dramas- *Pygmalion* and *Candida* are the projections of a new woman. E. M. Forster, the major novelist of the twentieth century advocated the philosophy of liberalism through his writings. His *A Passage to India* was published in 1924 is an

outstanding illustration of his liberal philosophy.

All these thinkers, philosophers, educationalists and literary writers tried their level best to create a balance between the inward changes and outward changes taking place in social, political, educational and cultural situations in European countries during the second half of the nineteenth century and before the First World War.

1.2. Emergence of Capitalism and Marxism:

T. S. Eliot, the greatest poet, dramatist, critic and prose writer of the twentieth century wrote a long poem entitled, *The Waste Land* in 1922. It is a critical and bitter commentary on the decline of human civilization. Human civilization includes morality, spirituality, preservation of human principles like love, truth, respect for each other, innocence, compassion, humanitarian attitude etc. Rapid expansion of industrialization and a large scale production of goods and materialistic items caused the procurement of additional money in developed countries. It gave birth to develop capitalism at the beginning of the twentieth century. It is said that money corrupts, absolute money corrupts absolutely. It was explicitly experienced in developed European countries during this period. The World War I straightforwardly divided countries into two groups one group of countries which had money and another group of the countries which did not have money. It boosted colonial and capitalistic attitude at the beginning of the twentieth century. T.S. Eliot's *The Waste Land* presents a picture of horrible changes taking place in external as well as internal factors during this period. Horrible noises, excessive money, clubs, pubs and lavishness brought number of unwanted things in European social cultural and political fields. Corruption, physical as well as monetary, exploitation of poor, helpless people as well as of women became a common practice in the existing social life. Wishful behaviour and self-centeredness increased in the minds of young men and women.

Homogenous environment started disappearing fast. Increasing screams of the motor horn, the raffles of machinery, the grinding of wheels, the beating of iron and steel, the roaring of the underground railway and barbaric cries of modern cities caused mental disturbances of human beings. It caused futility, frustration, rational, spiritual and physical barrenness of the twentieth century western civilization. T.S. Eliot argues that the crowds flowing over the London Bridge are victims of a machine-ridden civilization, the slaves of a deadening routine, divorced from the vitality of living traditions.

W.H. Auden, the twentieth century British poet and his colleagues got associated with the Marxist movement. They aimed at cultivating a new literary and political audience in order to create an intense interest in communism and consider acting upon the existing social-political issues like Spanish civil war and the struggle against Fascism. They made an attempt to find out the diagnostic solutions for sick, diseased and decaying capitalist society through their poetry during the period from 1933 to 1938. His poetic volume entitled, *Look, Stranger courageously* presents the necessity to transform the existing, diseased and decaying capitalist society which could not be recovered and remedied so easily.

The major poems of the Volume express the social and political issues and pressures of the period. As a poet, Auden contemplated on these issues and pressures, with a view to find out solutions. The political ideas, that Auden expressed in a number of poems of this volume in order to rebuild and reform the society. Thus, Auden's preoccupations were the reformation of society as well as individuals. In, other words, he wished to build a '*Just City*' and '*Just Men.*' For him, a '*Just Man*' is a revolutionary and the creation of a '*Just City*' is revolution. So, in order to give some shape to these ideas, Auden had to return to some political ideology, and the dominant ideology of the decade, Marxism which radically influenced him. This political ideology, therefore, as far as this poetic volume, entitled, *Look, Stranger* is concerned to certainly Marxist ideology.

1.3. Inflicting Influences of the two World Wars and Decline of Civilization:

Philosophers, thinkers and socialists firmly believed that the horrors of the first and second world wars terribly inflicted social, political, cultural and educational situations. Similarly, inequalities at economic, social, political and cultural levels prominently became responsible for the steep division between the rich and the poor. All these factors caused uneasiness, despair, frustration, disappointment and helplessness of men and women. Increasing economic division, between the rich and the poor, intensified straightforward division in every social and political aspect. The division of castes and classes further intensified the racial conflicts in social and political lives. Social injustices, exploitation of poor and helpless people became a prominent factor in every society. Nuclear bombs were dropped on Hiroshima and Nagasaki which created horrors among the minds of people all over the world.

Destruction of human as well as non-human elements was beyond imagination

and human thinking. It created fear, uncertainty, helplessness, meaninglessness in human life. Samuel Beckett, the twentieth century dramatist wrote the play entitled, '*Waiting for Godot*' in 1948. It accurately presents inflicting causes of the Second World War. It is about the degradation of mankind. It is about the disintegration of human mind. It is also about Pessimism, despair, defeatism and emptiness in human life, desperation, uncertainty, rampant individualism and brutal advancement of capitalism.

During the period of the two World Wars, laws and rules of civilization which were totally dented. Civilization which is necessary to preserve human principles was about to be crushed. Human society based on laws and rules plays an important role in holding human beings together for the welfare and betterment of human community. Lack of civilization gives birth to anarchy. Anarchy crushes human principles and basic ideas. Individual identity is lost. Human being moves towards savagery. The concept of law and order is the main source of civilization. William Golding, the greatest philosopher and novelist whose illustrated novel entitled, *Lord of the Flies*, accurately presents how the absence of law and order results an alteration of moral behaviour. It also reveals that the element of evil is well-rooted in human mind. Civilization helps to reduce its destructive effects. This being illustrated novel expresses William Golding's philosophy that the world should restore human in an unprincipled world restores belief in a world of unbelievers.

The Second World War gave birth to cold war. The cold war divided the world between two groups developed countries and undeveloped countries and later on the other world- the third world. It caused disintegration of human societies in general and disintegration of human personality in particular. It further caused excessive selfishness and self-centeredness, exploitation, corruption, commercial mentality, mercilessness, conspiracies and loss of humanitarian attitude. It also caused increasing coldness, deception, indifference, artificiality etc. among people at large.

Hugh MacLennan, a distinguished modern Canadian novelist has genuinely presented his vision of the Canadian social and political problems of his fellow countrymen and of the world at large in his novel entitled, *Voices in Time* written in 1980. In this novel, Hugh MacLennan expresses his anti-war feelings. The story of the novel narrates that in Germany before the First World War, pension was discontinued in order to divert the funds to purchase weapons. The administration could not realize the economic problem and consequently health and psychological problems of the old

people who had no other economic support. The story further points out that number of injustices were done to the civilians during the war period. The soldiers involved in both the world wars acted because they did not have any options. Their involvement in these world wars was an act of compulsion. Numerous families lost their children, young sons and daughters, old men and women during these two world wars. All over the world, there was an atmosphere of chaos. Numerous civilians lost their mental balance and became mad.

Joseph Conrad, the twentieth century novelist was a merchant skipper. He knew distinct parts of the British Empire. He was deadly against British Imperialism. His novels *The Secret Agent* (1907), *Heart of Darkness* (1902), *Lord Jim*, (1900), *Nostromo* (1904), etc. are the bitter and critical commentaries on the inflicting influences of the British colonialism on the social, political, religious, situations of the colonized people. His *Nostromo* is a political novel. Social, political, and cultural situations existing in Costaguana on the north coast of South America have been accurately depicted through this novel. It presents the corrupting influences on the natives. The San Tome Silver Mine was in a town of Sulaco. It was within the control of Charles Gould, an Englishman. Silver was being produced with the help of strenuous work of the natives. Despite their hard work, they were ill-treated and physically as well as monetarily exploited by the white men. They suffered a lot. They formed groups and organized riots and agitations and revolted against the firmly established British authority. Exploitation and ill- treatment of the natives ceaselessly continued.

Joseph Conrad's renowned novel *Heart of Darkness* is a minute picture of the blackest heart of the Belgian Congo, the most barbarous area. It is a realization of human experience. It is a realistic picture of the colonial exploitation and the ambiguity of the civilizing mission in Africa. British rules posed everywhere that, they had been to different nations to educate the natives, but it was not true. They had been to different nations to exploit the natives physically, mentally and monetarily. The story of *Heart of Darkness* presents a conflict between the natives and the white men. The white men did the trading of ivory with the help of the Africans. White manager undertakes a journey to rob the ivory. It is a symbolic journey into the blackest center of the heart and soul of man. The natives are inhumanly forced to work hard in the hot sun until they collapsed and died. His renowned novel entitled, *The Secret Agent* (1907), presents a deception, conspiracies, exploitations, corruption.

It also presents commercial and heartless attitude of white people towards the simple, illiterate people.

After the First World War, social, political, economic, cultural etc. situations continuously changed and became extremely complicated. It is said that, the coming events forecast their shadows. The world actually experienced this situation during the Second World War. Capitalism, Fascism and Marxism worked in various countries with an additional force and caused political conflicts with each other. Dictatorship in Germany and Italy rooted firmly. It caused a severe political tension all over the world. Countries were being ruined by dictatorship as well as by war. The Spanish Civil War and Munich Agreement added further social and political tensions. It was a time when the nations were in turmoil. The turmoil and conflicts spread on a global level. Rumours, conspiracies spread everywhere and caused riots, agitations, panic, fear and social and political tensions. Uneasiness and anxiety increased all over the world. Graham Greene, a renowned British novelist wrote his illustrated novels focusing on the inflicting influences of the Second World War. His two novels – *The Confidential Agent* (1939) and *The Quite American* (1955) are located in war-torn areas of the Second World War. His next two novels- Haiti in *The Comedian* (1996) and Paraguay in *The Honorary Consue* (1973) are located in the countries which were ruined by dictatorship and political tension. His novels present how British Children were being evacuated carrying gas masks to strange homes in England. Majority of authors, professional men, bankers, journalists etc. joined mysterious organization called the officers emergency Reserve leaving their families without support. Graham Greene's novels give accurate pictures of an inflicting influence of the Second World War on the contemporary social, political, cultural and economic situations.

Rudyard Kipling was an advocate of British imperialism. Like other British people, he believed that the Britishers had been to different nations to civilize and educate the natives. But it was not true. He always supported British imperialism through his writings. His novel entitled, *Kim* is the best illustration of his support to the British imperialism. His *Kim*, presents his criticism on Indians for their excessive religious activities, superstitions, illiteracy and uncivilized behaviour. It also presents poverty-stricken situation, exploitation of poor people and corruption existing during the British rule in India.

1.4. General Socio-Political Issues:

A Social issue is also called a social problem. It refers to an issue that influences and opposed by a considerable number of individuals within a society. It is often the consequences of factors extending beyond an individual's control and local geographical environment. In some cases, a social issue is the source of a conflicting opinion on the ground of what is perceived as a morally just personal life or social order. Different societies have different perceptions and norms for normal behaviour in one society. Some significant social issues are separated from political issues; however, some issues have both social and political aspects.

Personal issues are those that individuals deal with themselves and within a small range of the peers and relationships. On the other hand social issues attribute to values cherished by widespread society. The line between a personal issue and public issues may be subjective; however, when a larger sector of society is affected by an issue, it becomes social issue. Although one person being fired is not a social issue, the consequences of millions of peoples being fired are likely to generate social issues.

Socio-political analysis is a powerful instrument for understanding how countries work and what might be done to help them to work better. By focusing on histories, social relationships, identities, capacities, power dynamics and how resources are distributed and contested. One understands the formal structures to reveal the underlying interests, incentives, and institutions that determine how politicians act and how governments perform, and how policy choices play positive and negative influences on people. Such insights are important to improve governance, economic growth, the inclusiveness of the state, and prospects for development. In contrast to a more technocratic approach that ignores context, socio-political analysis puts context at the center stage. It assumes that politics matters, and that policy choices that are not rooted in a deep understanding of how countries work will not produce the results expected.

It is not a magic bullet for the resolution of intractable development problems. However, by helping to identify the main opportunities and obstacles to reform, it can help leaders to target their efforts in a way that makes them more likely to succeed. Supporting more effective and poetically feasible development strategies, as well as informing more realistic expectations of what can be achieved, and the risks involved, increase the chances of success. Development, it should be remembered, is a highly

political process especially in fragile states where social unity is weak and formal institutions do not work well.

The main issues socio-political analysis seeks to understand are : the interests and incentives facing different groups (particularly political elites), and how these influence politics, policies, and efforts to promote development; how formal institutions (e.g. rule of law, elections) and informal social, political and cultural norms interact and shape human interactions and political and economic competition; what values and ideas, including political ideologies, religion and cultural beliefs, matter to political behavior and public policy. There are the following social and political issues, which effect on the development of society.

1.4.1. Inequality:

There are various social and political issues. Inequality is one of the prominent social issues. Inequality is the state or quality of being unequal. Inequality is the root of a number of social problems that occur when things such as gender, race and age may affect the way a person is treated. A past example of inequality as a social problem is slavery in the United States. Africans were brought to America. They were often enslaved and mistreated, and did not share the same rights as the white population of America. It means they were not allowed to vote. So, inequality is one of the significant social issues. We have an historical example of the French Revolution which took place in 1789. The major demand of the lower classes was freedom, equality and fraternity. Lack of these principles causes numerous social and political complications.

1.4.2. Poverty:

There are various problems in the world. Poverty is one of the burning issues in the world. It is a global issue. All the countries around the world face the social issues of poverty. There are some countries which are economically poor than others like the developing countries in Africa, Asia and Latin America. Poverty is one of the biggest evils faced by India in the present scenario. With an increasing population of people in the Below the Poverty Line (BPL) across the nation, it seems like never-ending issue. Rising inflation has added further complications to the existing problems. India has an unbelievable numbers of people suffering due to this evil. According to the Indian Planning Commission's 2013 estimate, around 269 million

people (approximately 22% of the total population) live under the poverty line. And, when we start looking around for what has actually been done about it, we wouldn't really find much.

The government needs to take a strong action against the biggest social evil of all. Ministers need to work towards creating employment, and providing enough facilities and opportunities for the large population which does not even receive the basic amenities. New policies are the need of the hour, not only for employment creation but also to create a young educated population. Education must be promoted at all levels of the society to create awareness especially among the poor. Government should provide them security and take steps against the exploitation of poor peoples. So, the poverty is one of the curses for the society.

1.4.3. Corruption:

Corruption is ruining the spine of the nations. It has strongly affected the economy of various nations. India has been marred by a list of scams and scandals, which have crippled the nation from inside. From the Coalgate scam, to the 2G scam, to the CWG scandal and the Bofors scam, all brought forward the weaknesses of a government administration and a nation as a whole. This kind of situation is existing all over the world. Governments go on changing from time to time. Group of political leaders exchange blames to change political games. Political parties start blaming the other, but corruption is not really being fought and uprooted at the ground level. From common man to ministers at the top, all have been found involved in some of the world's biggest scandals.

With the help of strict rules at all levels of government undertakings, to an awareness among the people against the spread of corruption, steps to be taken by the government. Strong campaigns against corruption should actually be taken up by the leaders of the various nations and must imply the Anti-Corruption bill in the government administrations completely. While pointing a finger on others is the easiest way out, people need to realize the need to get rid of the 'under-the-table' bribing habit and strengthen our system by neither giving bribe, nor taking bribe. The government needs to take strong actions against a bribe-giver and a bribe-taker equally.

1.4.4. Criminal Justice System:

Another social and political issue is the Criminal Justice System. Internal Security is in many ways related to the state of criminal Justice administration in the country. Efficient policing and successful investigation and prosecution of crimes help generate fear of the law in the minds of criminally inclined to keep them within the bounds of law. On the other hand, careless investigations and dispirited prosecutions result in acquittals, shaking the faith of the people in the governance, inducing them to take law in their own hands to settle personal scores. Thus, the aim of a fair criminal justice system should be to entail zero tolerance to crime and decide and prompt punishment to those who are found to be on the wrong side of the law. The citizens expect the criminal justice system to be honest, impartial, efficient and prompt.

1.4.5. Communalism:

Communalism becomes a more sensitive social and political issue. India has various cultures and religions. It has ever-since its formation suffered due to communal differences. Communal clashes have led to a lot of violence in various incidents across the country. The Hindu-Muslim clash during the partition of India. Not to forget the bloodbath that took place during the Babri Masjid demolition case. India has been affected both economically and politically, after such incidents took place. There are conflicts between the Christians and Jews, and conflict between Native Americans and African Americans. Even the conflict between black and white takes place among the various nations. Communal and racial conflicts are age-old and world-wide. Social and political systems had been unjust and narrow minded all over the world which need internal changes.

The governments need to handle such issues with extreme sensitivity, along with making sure that communalism and racism are not used for political gains by its ministers. Besides political understanding, change needs to be brought from the grass roots level itself. The caste division must be decreased by educating the younger generation and sensitizing them about such issues.

1.4.6. Illiteracy:

Illiteracy is considered one of the main roots of all the social and political issues. Illiteracy can be more dangerous than poison. Ignorance is death-knell of

democracy. It thrives, survives, and persists on efficacious functioning of its education. Education imparts the ability to ask questions and then the basis to find answers. It creates awareness among people. In democracy, education is the guiding force. An individual, in a democratic system, only knows to balance between rights and responsibilities through his experiences and learning imparted by the education. Today, one can see the growing desperation and frustration amongst the people and the level has been reflected in their driving, talking, thinking, writing, voting, and discussions and over all their relations with each other. The entire edifice of social relationship is in jeopardy. The behavioral predictability has gone down and a sense of insecurity has been generated and the entire life has become very uncertain. In the absence of proper education, the whole philosophy of life has become confusing. The education removes confusion and imbibes confidence. If the educational system is partial, confused, and then nobody on earth can remove the confusion and denigration of behavioral pattern.

Education is not necessary only for employment but also for learning to create a sensitive and growth-seeking younger generation. A youth needs to be empowered with education, to further know their rights and responsibilities as the citizens of the country. Illiteracy needs to be tackled as one of the biggest social evils of the nation. It is the biggest reasons why the youth is misguided and involved in criminal as well as terror activities.

The government needs to enforce free education and strict rules to follow it in every family poor or not poor. An educated population will eventually lead to the country having a stronger workforce as against the destructive – minded organizations. Education is sure to change the poverty and unemployment scenario in the country. At the core level, the people need to be made aware of the importance of education to enrich their lives. These had been evidences that, Illiteracy had become the greatest obstacle in the progress of every society.

1.4.7. Violence against Women:

Violence against Women is a burning social issue. Women in some of the countries live under a constant fear all the time. A fear of going out alone disturbs every female mind living in some of the countries. The rising cases of sexual abuse and rape across the world have left a black mark on the reputation of some countries. Foreign tourists have been known to have been given special warnings while

travelling to respective countries, in fact some countries even labeled these nations as unsafe countries for women, after the deadly Delhi gang Rape case. Rapes continue to take place, and no actions have been taken against the culprits. In most cases, victims die, and if they survive they live a worse and abused life than ever.

Before the governments do anything about the security, the people themselves need to take a stand against crime against the women. Dutiful citizens need to fight this social evil. The youth needs to be sensitized about the safety of women, and the respect to be given to women. Strong police action needs to be taken against the culprits, and cases need to be handled with more sensitivity and through a quick process. Moral-minded people need to see justice happening all over the world. The country as a whole needs to be ready to tackle such social evil, along with the government. So, violence against women has become a serious social issue.

1.4.8. Racism:

Racism is a set of beliefs that some people are inferior or superior to others because of their distinctive and inborn biological characteristics which are defined by race. As a result there is an attitude of bias, prejudice and intolerance towards certain racial groups which are being treated differently, both socially, politically and legally. The word racism was used for the first time in the early 1930s as a book titled by the German physician and sexologist Magnus Hirschfeld (1868 to 1935).

There are two notions of racism. One is to discriminate and exclude on the basis of ethnicity, colour, race or descent and is defined as racial discrimination in the United Nations Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Racial Discrimination. According to this definition the terms ethnicity and race are interchangeable. The other notion is to discriminate and be prejudiced towards those who are not necessarily racially different, but differ in terms of gender (women), sexual preference (homosexuals), religion, and class. However, racism has been the longest directed against those of colour.

Racism is the division of people into groups that are physically and innately different in social behaviour, culture and mental abilities. On the basis of these beliefs, a "we feeling" is formed among the members of the "superior" group, distinguished with specific standards and values according to which the outsiders are measured and judged.

Racism is considered to be a psychological phenomenon and one of its preconditions

is anxiety. It is commonly displayed in socially unstable societies and societies in transition which need a common enemy in order to strengthen their feeling of belonging and identity.

There are three main reasons behind racism manifestation: ideology, greed and fear. The main ideology of racism that of superiority has been manifested through slavery, colonialism, genocide and apartheid. Theology has also been used as a justification for racism. Greed for natural resources has been the main reason behind slavery and colonialism. The need of more living space for the superior race or the expansion of western Christian tradition and civilizing backward regions and races were only part of the justifications for colonialism.

Collective fear is the third cause for racism as well as for ethnic conflict. The collective fear held by the white minority in South Africa of the country's indigenous black majority saw the development and application of the system of apartheid.

There is also a form of domestic racism which is referred to as social stratification. It is a system of legitimated, social inequalities according to which some people receive more of the society's wealth, power and prestige at the expense of others. The reason is that society is formed of "irreconcilable groups," and a unitary government is not in a position to govern all of them. Such division is a precondition for good and orderly government. The apartheid theory was based on the belief that whites and blacks should be kept apart in the name of peace and prosperity for all. As well as racial divisions, there can be cultural, linguistic or religious divisions applied in society, for the benefit of one group over another.

There is also called the inter-minority racism which occurs between minority groups within a society. An example of inter-minority would be racial tensions between African Americans and Mexican Americans.

1.4.9. Terrorism:

The most serious threat to various nations' security is terrorism. The problem of militancy, insurgency and left-wing extremism may have distinct sociological or political underpinning but for legal purposes, they are one and the same phenomenon. A terrorist act is a penal offence as defined in the statute, regardless of whether, it has been perpetrated by militants or terrorists or insurgents or left-wing extremists. For the purpose of this Research, all these terms are subsumed under the rubric of terrorism. Terrorism has affected India since the day India was partitioned. The

dispute over Kashmir between India and Pakistan has been a long-standing unresolved issue. Using this, the neighbouring country has often used terror against India in the worst manners possible. Uncountable incidents of terror attacks in Kashmir, and its nearby regions such as Srinagar, along with the major cities of the country, have been a source of disturbances very often. Terrorism mainly causes loss of lives, but also affects the country economically.

The government needs to take a strong stand against the neighbouring countries terror activities and needs to take action and not only hold peace talks. It's the need of the hour that the citizens of the country are provided with security as well as an as surety of safety. A sensitive approach towards terrorists may be attempted to make them surrender.

Terrorism is not a new social and political issue. It has been described variously as both a tactic and strategy; a crime and a holy duty; a justified reaction to oppression and an inexcusable abomination. Obviously, a lot depends on whose point of view is being represented. Terrorism has often been an effective tactic for the weaker side in a conflict. As an asymmetric form of conflict, it confers coercive power with many of the advantages of military force at a fraction of the cost. Due to the secretive nature and small size of terrorist organizations, they often offer opponents no clear organization to defend against.

In some cases, terrorism has been a means to carry on a conflict without the adversary realizing the nature of the threat, mistaking terrorism for criminal activity. Because of these characteristics, terrorism has become increasingly common among those pursuing extreme goals throughout the world. But despite its popularity, terrorism can be a nebulous concept.

Even within the U.S. Government, agencies responsible for different functions in the ongoing fight against terrorism and extremism, use different definitions. The United States Department of Defense defines terrorism as *“the calculated use of unlawful violence or threat of unlawful violence to inculcate fear; intended to coerce or to intimidate governments or societies in the pursuit of goals that are generally political, religious, or ideological.”* Within this definition, there are three key elements - violence, fear, and threat and each element produces terror in the minds of its victims.

Terrorism is a criminal act that influences an audience beyond the immediate victim. The strategy of terrorists is to commit acts of violence that draws the attention

of the local population, the government, and the world to their cause. The terrorists plan their attack to obtain the greatest publicity, choosing targets that symbolize what they oppose. The effectiveness of the terrorists act lies not in the act itself, but in the public's or government's reaction to the act. For example, in 1972 at the Munich Olympics, the Black September Organization killed eleven Israelis. The Israelis were the immediate victims. But the true target was the estimated one billion people watching the televised event. Those billion people watching were to be introduced to fear - which is terrorism's ultimate goal. The introduction of this fear can be from the threat of physical harm or death to a large extent, financial terrorism from the fear of losing money or negative effects on the economy, cyber terrorism harming the critical technological infrastructures of society and psychological terrorism designed to influence people's behaviour. There are three perspectives of terrorism: the terrorists, the victims, and the general public's. The phrase "*one man's terrorist is another man's freedom fighter*" is a view terrorists themselves would gladly accept. Terrorists do not see themselves as evil. They believe that they are legitimate combatants, fighting for what they believe in, by whatever means possible to attain their goals. A victim of a terrorist act sees the terrorists as criminals with no regard for human values and human life. The general public's view though can be the most unstable. The terrorists take great pains to foster a "Robin Hood" image in hope of swaying the general public's point of view towards their cause. This sympathetic view of terrorism has become an integral part of their psychological warfare and has been countered vigorously by governments, the media and other organizations. In this way, terrorism has become very sensitive social and political issue all over the world.

1.5. Novels:

1.5.1. Brief Summaries of the Selected Novels:

***Kim* – Rudyard Kipling (1901)**

Joseph Rudyard Kipling was an English short-story writer, poet, and novelist. Kipling was most popular writer in England in both prose and verse in the late 19th and 20th centuries. In 1907, he was awarded Nobel Prize in Literature. Kipling was a great empire writer. His novels deal with empire theme. In fact, *Kim* (1907) is a novel which deals with the Spy theme, the Great Game espionage. The *Kim* is a story about social and political issues, like India's complexity, its mystery, its culture, and traditions.

The story deals against the backdrop of The Great Game, the political conflict between Russia and Britain in central Asia. The story is set after the second Afghan war which ended in 1881. The novel portrays the people, culture, and varied religions of India. It also presents the vivid pictures of Indian religions, and superstitions. It focuses on orphan's miserable lives, poverty, espionage, and secret plotting.

Kim is the poor orphaned, son of an Irish soldier. His parents died in poverty. Their social condition was very complicated. He works with Mahbub Ali, a horse trader, who is one of the native operatives of the British Secret Services. Kim becomes his disciple, and accompanies him on his journey. Incidentally, he learns about the parts of the Game. He becomes a messenger. Kim also keeps contact with his secret service connections and is trained in espionage. Here, only through the circumstances, he becomes a spy.

The novel *Kim*, presents Indian customs, traditions, religions, and cultural diversities. The story deals with social stigma, like the miserable lives of the orphans. It portrays the social issues like castes and their principles. It expresses Rudyard Kipling's respect for the British empirical system.

***The Secret Agent* – Joseph Conrad (1907)**

The Secret Agent is Conrad's best political masterpiece. In this novel, Mr. Verloc is a spy at Russian embassy in London. He has worked as a spy for eight years. Due to unsatisfied work, his new boss gives him warning of terminating his services unless he does some improvement in order to justify the payment which he receives. He has been assigned a task to organize a bomb blast at the Greenwich Observatory. In fear of losing his job and security, he employs a mentally deficient boy Stevie, Winnie's brother. Winnie had sewn the address tag inside the coat, police came to know his address and traces the conspiracy to Verloc's house. Winnie discovers that, her husband was responsible for Stevie's death. She has strong maternal affection for her brother, Stevie. So, she murders Verloc. After committing murder of Verloc, She feels afraid. She runs away and commits suicide by jumping into Sea from a steamer. In fact, F. R. Leavis has highly appreciated this novel and said that, it is one of the novels that have a perfect structure.

***The Confidential Agent* - Graham Greene (1939)**

The Confidential Agent was written by the British Author Graham Greene. It is a thriller novel. Graham Greene emphasizes the horror of modern war, particularly the physical and mental effects of bombing on civilian population. It was written within six weeks in 1938. It has a hallucinatory quality and it reminds readers of Kafka. The central character of the novel stumbles from one trap into another. He is terribly thwarted at each turn. His mission of getting a coal contract for his nation is seemingly almost deemed. Most of the characters experience terrible fears. Each scene proves to be risky and dangerous. D., the protagonist is finally given a death punishment. His novels are concerned with various forms of injustice – the injustice inherent in the patriarchal order in which men enjoy a natural precedence and power over women, who are seen as mere objects. The major focus is given on themes like, male domination, violence against women, deception, and exploitation of children, double dealing, betrayal and cruelty.

***Casino Royale* - Ian Fleming (1953)**

Casino Royale is the first novel published by the British author Ian Fleming. He is well-known spy novelist. It was published in 1953. The novel deals with violent action, hairbreadth escapes, international espionage, spy gadgets, intrigues and gorgeous women, gambling, and deceptions.

It carries a simple plot, the villain Le Chiffre, a Russian spy operating in France, who has misappropriated KGB Funds and turned to gambling to make good the loss. James Bond as the secret services the most accomplished gambler is sent to Royale – les Eaux to defeat Le Chiffre at the tables thereby ruining him and his French network. There are some incidents of grotesque, torture and a rescue. The novel ends in a gratuitous burst of betrayal and misogyny.

1.6. Statement of the Problem:

Spy novel is sometimes called a political thriller or a spy thriller. It is a specialized type of novel. It is skillfully planned and presented. It consists of well-drawn characters and exciting actions. High degree of suspense, tensions, excitements and curiosity are the striking features of spy novel. Conspiracy, a genuine threat of stealing secret documents and information, deception, betrayal, exploitation are the favourite themes of spy novel. Socio- Political issues, communal and racial conflicts

are equally favourite themes of spy novels. It is a challenging task to discuss, analyse and explain the issues presented in the selected novels.

1.7. Hypothesis:

The Socio-Political issues are inevitable aspects of the twentieth century writing in English Literature. The research study analyses and interprets the Socio-Political Issues in the selected novels in a true sense. It is hypothesized that, spy fiction has its roots in the contemporary social, political and cultural events.

1.8. Aims and Objectives of Research:

1. To evaluate the identity crisis, political extremism, and exploitations of marginal's presented in the selected novels.
2. To elucidate the characteristics of spy novels in the context of social and political issues.
3. To study the encompassed layers of identity crisis, and orphans lives which are presented in the selected works.
4. To evaluate the concept of espionage and anarchism with reference to the selected novels.
5. To focus on the sub-genre of popular fiction.
6. To study the poetics of spy fiction with reference to the selected novels.

1.9. The Significance of the Study:

In spy fiction, there are various issues, but in the present thesis, the study is primarily focused on the socio-political issues presented in the four different novels. These selected four novels are as under:

Kim by Rudyard Kipling (1901)

The Secret Agent by Joseph Conrad (1907)

The Confidential Agent by Graham Greene (1939)

Casino Royale by Ian Fleming (1953)

The present study emphasizes the socio-political issues presented in the above-cited illustrated novels. It will be useful to the graduate and post-graduate students to understand different perspectives of spy fiction. Readers can make use of this thesis independently with full advantages to know the various characteristics of spy novels. The thesis is intended to serve as a new way for further study to create interest among

the students and researchers. Students will be enabled to enjoy a different genre of literature to understand social and political issues and various perspectives of literature.

The present study will give the readers an appropriate stand and distinct impression of the four twentieth century novelists. The readers will understand the themes of espionage, anarchism, exploitation of marginals. The research will be helpful to literature – lovers as well as common readers to know various aspects such as identity crisis, gender issues, exploitations, political extremism, and social issues. Many spy fiction writers believe that spy fiction is the best source of popularizing fiction among masses. The proposed study will help many readers, critics, teachers, researchers, to judge the analyzed issues in different ways, becoming suitable to their individual talent for handling spy fiction as an emerging genre.

1.10. Pedagogical Implications of the Study:

The selected four writers are the prominent writers of the modernism and post-modernist literature. They had been the part of the teaching profession. Some of their novels, poems, and short stories are the parts of the syllabi of different universities. *The Secret Agent* (1907) is a part of the prescribed syllabi at graduate level in some of the renowned Indian universities, such as Savitribai Phule University of Pune. Similarly, Joseph Conrad was prescribed as a special author for post-graduate level of some renowned Indian Universities. In such a way, the present study will give the readers a firm and distinct impressions of the quality of the great novelists like, Joseph Conrad, Rudyard Kipling, Graham Greene, and Ian Fleming. The readers will also understand the themes of socio-political issues, like exploitations, espionage, political extremism, identity crisis, gender issues, and deceptions.

The present research will also be helpful to know the various issues such as identity crisis, political extremism, cruelty, corruptions, fear, exploitations, espionage, and terrorism along with the social and political issues of the selected novels. This research study may play very important role in their investigations of various themes and new ideas in their writings. The researcher has genuinely tried to be authentic and reliable in collecting and forming his research material.

1.11. Justification for the Present Study:

The selected novels illustrate the issues like identity crisis, political extremism, terrorism, gambling, exploitations, violence, and corruptions, deceptions, fear, ethics and demoralizations. The fact is that, the themes of the selected novels may have the universal application that set out to study the orphan's experiences around the world. This makes the study socially and politically important because the problems it analyses are universal. The proposed study is interlinked with the genre of popular fiction. Such fiction touches those issues which are left, untouched by serious fictions. The present study is directly related to spy fiction in general and socio-political issues in particular. Therefore, there is a need to study the socio-political issues in the selected spy novels.

1.12. Social Significance of the Study:

In the spy fiction there are various facets, but in this thesis, the focus is on the Socio-Political Issues presented in the selected Spy novels. The present study encompasses the socio-political issues in the selected spy novels. It will be helpful to undergraduate and post-graduate students to know the different perspectives of modern and post-modern literature in English. Reader can make use of this thesis independently with complete advantages to know various perspectives of spy fiction in English Literature. The present thesis is intended to serve as a new way for further study to create real interest in modern and post- modernist literature and to enable the students to enjoy literature with deep understanding of its various genres, identity crisis, and political extremism, terrorism, exploitations, deceptions, and various issues in modern literature. From this point of view, this study is very necessary and significant.

1.13. Scope and Limitations of the Study:

A) Scope for the Spy novelists during the Modern Period:

The topic has a great deal of scope, as it is a new topic. The genre of spy fiction has its own history. Today, the readers, literary critics and writers appear to be taking much interest in such fiction. A lot of work still needs to be done in spy fiction writing in English. The study will help readers and writers of spy fiction to assess the talent and works of individual writers of spy fiction.

B) Limitations:-

- 1) The research study is focused only on the four selected writers and their spy novels and their perspectives.
- 2) There are limitations to the present study. The researcher is concerned with the spy fiction writing in English only.
- 3) In spy fiction, there are limited reference books and study materials.
- 4) Another limitation is that a small number of researches on spy fiction writing in English has been done so far.

1.14. Research Methodology:

The present study is descriptive, analytical and interpretative in nature. As it is a library research, it also aims to find out the representative works of the novelists. The study covers a close exploration of the visible and invisible impact of social and political issues related to identity crisis, social injustices, exploitations, orphans lives, and political extremism in the selected novels. However, some of the significant instances from the novels are selected for the application of the principles of issues of social and political. While doing this type of examination certain secondary sources have also been taken into account. The study is based on selective sampling. The present study is carried out by using relevant conceptual tools related to the spy fiction, fictional narratives, structural patterns of the spy fiction and Socio-Political issues in the selected spy novels. This strategy of reading selected texts helped the researcher to analyze other works of spy fiction. The research is completed by applying following methods:

- a) Data collection and detailed analysis of primary and secondary data.
- b) The researcher visited various libraries for the collection of primary and secondary data.
- c) The researcher has used text books, reference books, newspapers, journals, magazines, periodicals, internet and other publications based on the selected writers.
- d) The use of bibliography/websites or internet sources in relation to the selected works. Thus, the textual method and analytical method for study are used as the methodology for this research.
- e) The researcher has used the MLA style sheet (8th edition) for citation and referencing.

1.15. Conclusion:

In this section, the researcher has genuinely attempted to present a great upheaval of social, political, economic, cultural etc. situations taking place during the period from 1880 to the emergence of globalization and privatization. This is the period during which the world witnessed the expansion of British imperialism and its hostile and inflicting influences on the social, political, religious, economic, cultural etc. lives of the colonized nations. It is also the period during which the world witnessed the tug-of-war between the Capitalism and Marxism. It was really a great misfortune of the world to experience the horrible destruction of human beings, non-human things and nature in general. Thinkers, philosophers, writers, poets, artists during this period undoubtedly proved to be Light House to the entire world but the wounds penetrated so deeply which could not be recovered and remedied so easily.

In this chapter, the research topic is discussed in relation to its various concepts. It has extensively discussed the term ‘spy fiction’ and its relation to social and political issues reflected in the selected novels. The chapter deals with the importance of the study of the novels of Joseph Conrad, Rudyard Kipling, Graham Greene, and Ian Fleming. All the novels are related to identity crisis, political extremism, exploitations, terrorism, and deceptions.

The aims and objectives of the research are noted in relation to research problem selected. In the further section, the methodologies of data collection, textual analysis, interpretation and the use of modern technical devices for collection of data are discussed. It is followed by the justification for the research in the selected four different spy novelists. It has been tried to justify the research with appropriate and supportive information. While stating the scope and limitations of the study that has been made clear that, the socio-political issues have universal appeal, but these issues are related to the only selected novels. Therefore, it has limitations. This research has some social and pedagogical significance. The present study illustrates the issues of identity crisis, political extremism, terrorism, deceptions, exploitations, and fear.

This makes the study socially significant as it deals with the issues which are universal. The study definitely will help the research students as an authentic source in future. It will also be helpful to the graduate and post-graduate students of English literature how to analyze and interpret novels.

Works Cited:

Albert, Edward. *History of English Literature*. 1979.

Conrad, Joseph. *The Secret Agent*. Collector's Library, 2005.

Greene, Graham. *The Confidential Agent*. Open Road Media, 2018.

Kipling, Rudyard. *Kim: High Interest Classics with Comprehension Activities*. EDCON Publishing Group, 2003.

Paranjpe, Shrikant. "Is There Need for A Comprehensive Legislation to deal with matters of Internal Security." *Internal security in India*, 1st ed., Indus Source Books, 2014, pp. 130,133.

CHAPTER II--- THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK 27---47

2.0. Introduction

2.1. Background of the Spy fiction in English Literature

2.2. Origin of Secret Services

2.3. Vedic Cosmic Order and the growth of Security System

2.4. Conclusion

Works Cited

2.0. Introduction –

The genre of spy fiction, sometimes called political thriller or a spy thriller. Spy fiction is a type of fiction which is concerned with various kinds of espionage. It is a specialized type of fiction, which is skillfully plotted and contains well- drawn characters and exciting actions. High degree of suspense, tensions, and curiosity are the major characteristics of spy novels. It is extremely authentic in all technical details. The favourite themes of spy fiction are conspiracy, deception, panic, and a genuine threat of secret documents being stolen. The use of spies had been a practice in England since the 16th century. Along with the changes in human nature and the relations among different nations necessary changes had been introduced in the use of spies. In the 20th century, there emerged numerous service agencies and secret police organizations operating all over the world. Spying might be a profession. It has traditionally been used by the nations as a weapon of war. But using it in their dealings with other powers, it is also used for internal security. Spy stories deal with all kinds of under covered activities, in both war and peace, from gathering of information at home or abroad, to the active mounting of operations behind enemy lines. The kind of spy story has changed along with the changes in the real world of local and international politics. Perhaps not surprisingly, a number of spy story writers have themselves had experience in the secret world.

The spy stories are fictional, but they take their marks from the real world. Although spying is age-old and secret agent's stories; they are relatively new and their rise to popularity corresponds with industrialization and the rise of the nations. The spy stories first became popular in Great Britain in the late nineteenth and early twentieth century. It was a time of relatively peace and security in England. But there were threats to that peace from growing competition among the great powers. The working class agitations were increasing. The conflicts between the industrialists and the working class created law and order complications. Great Britain had its own problems with unrest and pressure for Home Rule in Ireland. The newly literate public imagination was easily caught by stories about international intrigues, terrorists, and evil. Foreign powers and brave struggles stood against them. A number of writers used spying or at least the collection and reporting of secret information about adverse powers in their stories.

Spy means a person, who usually collects military, political, social and industrial information about one country for the benefit of others. The spy is expected to have certain general abilities, which are common for all the spies but not all the spies are same, of course, there are clear differences among them, something which makes them special. For example, Fleming's James Bond figures. He is the most famous figure in spy fiction. James Bond, Harry Pendel, Harry Palmer have all something in common, but in spite of that fact they are all special in their task.

Spy fiction, a genre of literature involves espionage as a significant plot device. It emerged in the early twentieth century. It was inspired by rivalries and complications among the major powers, and the establishment of modern intelligence agencies. It was given new lift by the development of fascism and communism during the World War II, and continued to develop during the cold war. It received a fresh impetus from the emergence of morbid states, international criminals, global terrorist networks, wartime piracies and technological devices as powerful threats to western societies. Spy fiction as a genre is thematically related to the novel of adventure such as *The Prisoner of Zenda, 1894, The Scarlet Pimpernel, 1905.*

It is necessary to understand how spy fiction emerged as a specialized form of writing or as a literary genre. It is essential to identify some basic issues in earlier works and to assess Socio-Political Issues in the selected works of spy fiction. The first novel of this kind dealt centrally with espionage such as, James Fennimore Cooper's *The Spy (1821)*. It was the first example in the history of spy fiction writing. It has all the characteristics of spy fiction. Some elements of spy fiction could be seen in the biblical books. *The Bravo (1831)* is another book written by Cooper consisting of spy theme. It attacked European anti-republicanism by depicting Venice, Where a ruthless oligarchy wearied the mask of the "serene republic." Erskine Childers *Riddle of the Sands* is another example of spy novel. He was a writer of political activities. Rudyard Kipling's *Kim (1901)* is based on the 'Great Game' espionage and politics between Europe and Asia in Afghanistan. Kipling's novel takes place in India, in which an Anglo-Indian boy uses his Indian origin to cover colonial espionage during the great game. *Kim* is a boy, who was employed by the British secret service and under their guidance he became a spy for a mission. In the pre-World War I period, Joseph Conrad published two novels about revolutionary agents. Both are involved in espionage and secret service activities. The first novel is *The Secret Agent (1907)*, Verloc is the spy in this novel. It is about politics and anarchist activities which take

place in London. The second is *Under Western Eyes* (1911), in which ‘Razumov’ is the spy. The agents in these two novels are Russians. Joseph Conrad’s contribution in spy fiction is quite admirable.

Wars and war interests are associated with each other. Spies have a long history dating back to biblical time. Spies made their appearance relatively late in the literary field. The spy story as a literary genre appeared before the two world wars. The first modern intelligence services started to appear during the same period. The rise of spy novels can be associated with an understanding of national insecurity during the time of changing international relations. The spy novel as a genre is difficult to define because its borders are not clear. They fall between crime novels and adventure novels. The action of the story is mostly evidential, political and the genre is constructed and defined by its international subject. Another distinction from the detective genre is that the investigator is often an agent. On the contrary, the spy novel has unique characteristics. A good spy novel makes a reader to feel the world from the inside perspective of the spy.

The present study is interlinked with genre of popular fiction. Such fiction includes those issues which are left, untouched by serious fiction. Though the basic purpose of popular fiction is to entertain, one can study Ian Fleming’s novels from different angles. It is also related to existential philosophy. At the beginning of the twentieth century, there emerged international spy agencies and at the same time existential philosophy also came to the fore. One can easily relate these two aspects in research. This research takes into account the premises of existential philosophy and tries to place it at the center of spy novel. The present study is directly related to Spy fiction in general and Socio-Political concepts in particular. For some people, spying could be considered immoral, and dishonorable. It is a special feature of human life that one action is positive, beneficial in a particular situation but the same action becomes harmful, dangerous in another situation. Because morality, honesty are relative.

2.1. Background of the Spy fiction in English Literature:

The word “Espionage” came from the French word. ‘Espionage’ means spying and from “espioner,” means to a spy. The espionage can be considered as the use of spies to get secret information about country and its systems of organization. The obtained information is considered confidential. This information always played very

important role for them. Spies mostly operate in an unstable and dangerous world. Secret information can provide other party a great deal of advantage. During the settlement of dispute and claims, spies collect data that show the intentions, plans, orders, strategies and capabilities of the enemies and provide the basic for making decision and action. The obtained information can create the platform for analysis with the following warning, When we think about espionage images like hidden cameras, stolen microfilms, recorders, exploding pens or cigars, stolen data, mystery spies usually comes to our mind.

It is generally said that, Spies usually accept the high risk to serve their country, particularly in war time. However, in wartime there is a probability for spies to be executed if they are caught. Espionage, intelligence, investigation and prosecution have traditionally formed a part of the state security system. The working field of these agencies changes depending on the aims and objectives of the state. The basic concept and fundamental techniques have remained common. Collection of intelligence on adversaries has been an important weapon of offence and defense since the days when the primitive man fought as an individual, a family or a tribe. The system can be traced way back into the past, almost to the beginning of the first political organization which bore resemblance to what can be called a state. It is a battle in which almost every country in the world takes part. Nearly all nations have laws against espionage but unchangeably all of them involve in espionage themselves. The only difference is one of the scales. (Trivedi,) The fact is that the great deal of progress in scientific techniques and electronic aids has been made since the eighteenth century. It has contributed to the efficiency of 'secret services,' and made their significance for the preservation of governments, and even the existence of states more evident. The basic concept and role of this institution has remained uniform throughout the recorded history. (Encyclopedia Britannica, 680)

It is highly striking that ideologists feel shy of accepting the unchallenged expertise and contribution of Kautilya in the field of 'Secret Services.' Western scholars give a credit to Chinese sage of the 4th century B.C. (Trivedi, 2) With a systematic and complete study of this science. Richard Deacon, the author of the *History of the Chinese Secret Service*, while expressing reluctance to assert with any authority as to who first started a formal system of espionage in the world, observes, "there is no doubt, whatsoever, as to who first studied the whole question of espionage as an intellectual exercise, who analyzed it, developed certain axioms

concerning it, worked out a complete system of espionage and set it down in a textbook. (Deacon Richard, 1) His name is Sun Tzu, the author of the Ping Ta, *The Art of War*...the earliest known text book of espionage and the arts of war generally and on the organization of a secret service particularly.” (David Wise & Thomas Rose, 288) Supporting to this view, David Wise and Thomas Rose refer to the appointment of secret agents by Moses “to spy out the land of cannon, to judge the resistance that might be met in making it the new home of the Israelites.” (Dvornik, 10-23)

The Egyptians Babylonians Assyrians and later the Greeks and Hellenistic states had used fast means of transmission of information and intelligence to the capital from the far- flung parts of their empires. (Even for a highly absolutist ancient Egypt monarchy, it would seem necessary to maintain, besides an intelligence service abroad, a body of secret police to keep a sharp eye on his Majesty’s own subjects and to test their loyalty. But they did not have such elaborate organization, although there was present at the court a high official known as “the eyes and ears of the king whose business was to make confidential enquiries”. An official with a similar designation also existed in Persia during the reign of Cyrus. (Trivedi, 2)

Regarding the treatment of espionage in the Ping Ta and stray references in the Greek and Indo-Iranian adventures, there is indisputable which testifies to the origin of ‘secret services’ in the Vedic period to which the most ancient texts of humanity provide copious references. The Arayans were the pioneers in this field with secret agents mentioned in the Vedic literature. (Trivedi,2) In the Vedic literature the gods, particularly Indra and Varuna are portrayed employing a band of ubiquitous agents (Spasas), and where ‘sarama’ tracks down criminals. The detailed treatment of Secret Services including all aspects of the organization dealt at length. In the *Arthashastra*, *Kautilya*, renowned political thinker had discussed and propounded in the field of state craft, diplomacy, war and espionage. In the aspect of espionage, no technique of intelligence and no consideration of war efforts have missed from Kautilya’s perception. It is singular tribute to the genius of Kautilya that for nearly 2200 years of the long history of India, the principles propounded by him could not be improved upon. The techniques recommended in the *Arthashastra* though sometime featured by accusations, still remain unchallenged. Not only India with its far-flung geographical boundaries but the distant lands of ‘Dwipantara’ maintains the traditions of this celebrated political wizard.(Trivedi,3) The philosophy given in the *Arthasatra*

is that the steps elaborated by Kautilya to strengthen the position of king and the integrity of the state had the welfare of subjects uppermost as their objective. The theories propounded by Sun Tzu had no such lofty ideals in view. Even a casual study of the *Arthashastra* and details of handling secret agents mentioned in *the Ramanayana*, *the Mahabharata*, and the plays of Bhasa would provide a convincing proof that Indians in the pre-Christian era had already reached a high level in this field.

2.2 Origin of Secret Services:

The origin and later development of 'Secret Services' in early India is related to the geo-political conditions of the time, when the country was made definite with small states attempting to grab each other's territory and wealth. Spying was employed during the Vedic period, for the security of the state, to respect the moral order and for the removal of criminals. (Smith, 139) The art of employing spies was perfectly mastered, and almost all ancient Indian literary sources to a large extent deal with this system. In fact, they were inclined to respect the spies as greatly indispensable, and their work of supreme importance. The spying was considered as an inseparable characteristic and integral part of an efficient administration and of a sound and strong foreign policy. (Trivedi, 14) It kept the rulers posted with the activities, afflictions and operations of political adversaries, disloyal and dissatisfied elements, fifth columnists and foreign agents besides the strength and purposes of foreign powers. (Trivedi, 14) Espionage was thought as significant institution as diplomacy, and was sought to be governed by certain definite rules and usages. In Kautilya, the secret service department became a permanent feature of the state and was organized in the most 'uninhibited manner.' Everyone was overshadowed by spies, who were to move everywhere under the disguise of artisans, craftsmen, actors, dancers, singers, players of musical instruments, beggars, bards, acrobats, jugglers, etc. (Trivedi,15)

A strange and undesirable aspect of the administrative history of ancient India is that while in Kautilya readers find a greatly developed and complicated system of governance including an all pervasive espionage system, very little information is available on the stages of its development in the pre-Mauryan times. What Kautilya has presented which could not have been the creation of one man or one period. The *Mahabharata* refers to a mythological tradition on the origin of dandniti and art of

espionage which was handed down from the past; “while meditating for the welfare of the people Brahma made a work relating to Dharma, Artha, Kama, Moksha-the four aspects of life and extensive vidyas-trayi, anviksiki, and dandniti. Brahma’s composition included subjects of behaviour towards councillors, of spies, the indicting of princes of secret agents possessed of diverse means, of envoys, and agents of other kinds, conciliation, discord, gifts and chastisement... (Trivedi, 15)

Discussions of all kinds, counsels for production, the efforts of discussions, the results of the success or failure of counsel, deal of three kinds, viz. bad, middling and good, made through fear, good offices and gifts of wealth. The three kinds of victory viz. that served morally, that won by wealth, and secured by deceitful ways...punishment of two kinds, viz. open and secret ...The eight kinds of secret punishment...The use and administration of moveable and immovable, use of poison discussed in respect of the three kinds of things, viz. wearing apparel, food, self-protection, superintendence of the construction of vehicles and other means of war, the various means for securing and improving men...The disorders of troops and how to get rid of them, the devices of inspiring the army with joy and confidence, diseases in time of distress and danger...Inspiring the enemy’s kingdom by means of robbers and fierce wild tribes, and fire-raisers and poisoners and forgers; by creating disunion among the chief officers of enemy armies, by cutting down crops and plants the enemy’s elephants, by creating alarms, by honoring those among the enemy subjects that are well disposed towards the invader, and by inspiring the enemy with confidence. The means of winning over persons living in the enemy territory, the punishment and destruction of those are strong. It further discussed the open and secret acts of persons in all places of meeting, the continuous supervision of the behaviour of men. No other civilization can claim such techniques of war, diplomacy and espionage and on such compulsive considerations.

The primitive references to the activity of secret agents are available in the samhitas. Varuna and other deities of the Vedic pantheon heavily depended on their secret agents for observing the activities of the people, and for taking pre-emptive measures against the dasas and dasyus. (Trivedi, 16) His ordinances are fixed and unapproachable, through their operation, the moon walks in brightness; the stars appear in the nightly sky and mysteriously vanish in the day time. He knows the flight of birds in the sky, the path of ships in the ocean, the course of the far-travelling wind, and sees all the secret things done. No creature can win without him, and the witness

the truth and falsehood. Their agents were dutiful, moved everywhere to collect information, and no area was free from their ubiquitous presence. Varuna was supported by Sarama', the spy- bitch which goes around in search of criminals. She was also used by Indra. The Rgvedic traditions of Varuna agents were carried on in the later samhitas. Varuna is mentioned in the Atharva Veda as 'thousand – eyed' who looks over the earth. The Atharva Veda mentions Soma having vigilant and all pervasive secret agents. (Trivedi, 16) The spies of the divinely good deities were reflected on the earth when the Vedic king inculcated their qualities and attributes.

In the Rgveda and other Vedic texts two terms are mentioned in connection with crime, viz 'duta' and 'prahita'.(Trivedi,16) According to Macdonnel and Keith 'duta' acted as a messenger.(Trivedi, 16) In Rgveda 'duta' was a simple envoy carrying messages but with the passage of time, he became more specialized as an official handling diplomatic system of communications from one king to another.(Trivedi, 16) Sayana explains 'duta' as a representative of the king, while 'prahita' was a regular spy. The 'Duta' was skilful in collecting secret information about the enemy while staying in foreign areas. The 'prahita' was a representative of the secret services. (Trivedi,17)

The Sanskrit dictionaries use different terms for spies of various shades depending upon the nature of work and mode of their operation. The main element in all the terms used for a secret agent is his mobility and capacity to remain disguised and concealed, moving slowly, secretly and unobserved. *Amarkosa* mentions several synonyms for secret agent, i.e. *chara*, *pranidhi*, *prahita*, *apasara*, *spasa*, *gudhapurusa*, *apta*, *pratya*, *yita*, and *yathahivarana*.

Chara – It is the most commonly used expression for the roaming members of the secret service. It has been frequently mentioned in the literary, legal and canonical texts. It is explained by *Kautilya*, *Manu*, *Kamandaka* and *Yajnavalkya*, besides the later digest writers, as a person reputed from duta. Kamandaka says that a duta is an open (prakasa) spy, while a chara is a spy who operates in secrecy. (Trivedi, 17) According to the *Amarakosa*, chara is an agent sent abroad to collect necessary information. *Kamandaka* is more emphatic in defining 'chara' as 'one who is able to understand everything from gestures and postures; who is able to move slowly and cautiously, who is painstaking and efficient.' He is called 'chara' because of his being constantly mobile. Clearly speaking, chara had performed functions of both the "Special Branch" and the "Crime Branch", and translating him only as 'spy' in the

modern parlance would be a misnomer.

Pranidhi – This expression could be marked to the basic meaning ‘to depute, to employ, to send a person on specific assignment.’ The adjective ‘pranidhi’ is used for watching, observing, spying or sending out spies and emissaries. Another variant ‘pranibhu’ means ‘to become a spy’.

Prahita – Deputation of a person on a specific intelligence errand; means a person who is requested, incited or stirred up, sent on command or alert.

Apasarpa – It contains the same element of mobility. Another expression is ‘aparsar’ which means ‘to guide or to move off; a secret emissary or agent’. The other variant of the term is ‘aparsarpana’ which indicates ‘going back to retreat’.

Sanchara – It suggests secret agents and ‘their coming together, wandering about, converging on rendezvous, etc’.

Spasa – It indicates ‘the spy or an agent’ and finds mention in the Vedic, post – Vedic and early classical works.

Purusa – This used to be one of the categories of the official hierarchy in ancient India, and the term was used for a ‘Police-man’, ‘secret agent’ or ‘government servant of the lowest category’.

Gudhapurusa – As the word suggests the adjective ‘gudha’ means ‘secret or disguise’, which was the main characteristic of the intelligence life. The main element being the capacity, to remain ‘concealed and disguised’.

Apta – The root ‘ap’ indicates ‘to reach together. As an adjective it means ‘trustworthy, creditable or a genuine person’. Another variant is ‘aptkarin’, meaning ‘confidentially carrying out a task, a trusted agent or a confidant’. The root also signifies movement.

Pratyayita – As in the case of ‘prahita’ this expression indicates ‘deputation of a person on a secret assignment’.

The secret services ‘criminal intelligence’ as the ancient Indian society was threatened by monstrous marauders who could not be effectively controlled by the king in view of poor communications, continued foreign aggressions and internal disorders. The state made massive use of ‘Secret Services’ for diverse purposes but with the prime object of ensuring the security of state and protection of the people. The safety of the king and other royal dignitaries was also the responsibility of the ‘Secret Service’. As mentioned earlier, political thinkers advised both strong and weak kings to take pre-emptive measures for foiling the designs of their

‘adversaries.’(Trivedi, 18) *Kamandaka* advises the king to be conscious of the fact that ‘as he strives to harm his enemies through the means of his spies, the latter will also try to retaliate in the same manner.(Trivedi, 18) ‘It is suggested that ‘a king should be sharp and foresighted like a vulture, cunning like a conscious, like a dog, aggressive like a lion, fearful like a crow, and must go inside the territories of his enemy like a snake with ease and without anxiety with the help of his swift-footed secret agents.’ It is enjoined that guided by his spies the king should move to undertake the delicate task like ‘rtvija’ (worshipper) in a sacrifice being guided by the ‘sutras.’(Trivedi, 19) This made the king to monitor the shortcomings of his government, and helped him to take timely remedial measures.(Trivedi, 19) Secret agents were also utilized to collect reliable information about the tribal settlements, their movements and dispositions, which were extremely important in the context of an expanding Vedic society.(Trivedi, 19) They also confirmed the validity of invalidity of statements of parties in criminal and civil cases and collected information on the judge and their attitudes.(Trivedi, 19) There is a reference in the *Rgveda* which is examined in an interpretation that the spies used to detect criminals; “afraid of the spies, Yama rejects the love of his sister.’ (Trivedi, 19)

The reference to secret agents in the *Astadhyayi* - of Panini reveals that this institution had come to be known as a significant aspect of administration even before *Kautilya*. (Trivedi, 19) He refers to ‘upanisat’ as ‘secret means’ employed by the king and ‘aupansidika’ as an agent who makes his ‘living by secret means.’ Reader get mentions of ‘Visenavadyah’ (a person marked out for poisoning). This practice was well known in the *Arthashastra* where secret agents were used for administering poison to hostile targets. Patanjali mentions ‘dutas’ and ‘karnejapas’ or ‘suchakas.’(Trivedi, 19) The former were detailed to visit neighbouring states for collection of information, and to liaise with their governments. The report sent by an envoy was known as ‘vachika.’ ‘Karnejapas’ were ‘secret service men’ who collected information from urban areas. *Kautilya*, who investigated the most complicated and efficient system of espionage, has used several terms for spies and agents depending on their suitability and situational necessity. These are ‘Apasarpa,’ ‘apasarpam,’ ‘pathika,’ ‘utpathika’ ‘upanisada,’ ‘ubhayavetana,’ ‘gudhapurusa,’ and ‘chara,’ besides the expressions used for their various categories. (Trivedi, 19)

The *Sangam Age* in South India spread over the early centuries of the Christian era had an enough evidences to reveal that the institution of ‘Secret

Services' had come to be known as an important factor of the state machinery. (Trivedi, 20) The *Kural* a later work contains some interesting verses on spies;

“These two: the code renowned and spies,
 In these let king confide ‘as eyes’.
 Each day, of every subject every deed,
 It’s the king’s duty to learn with speed,
 His officers, his friends and enemies,
 All those who watch are his faithful spies,
 Of unsuspected men and all unfearing eyes,
 Those who let no secret out are worthily called spies.
 As monk or devotee through every obstacle makes way,
 A spy must search hidden matter out,
 and render full report, without a doubt,
 Spying by spies, the things they say,
 To test by other spies will pay.
 One spy must not another see; contrive it so,
 And have things thrice confirmed, so truth you will know.”

(Trivedi, 20)

The *Sangam* literature distinguishes ‘duta’ from a ‘spy.’ On the pattern of the Sanskrit works, ‘duta’ is called ‘an open spy.’ But sometimes, the difference was overlapping and the functions allotted to these two categories were differentiable. It may be mentioned with some reasons that officially the ‘dutas’ were thought superior to the ‘orarr’ and that while the king looked upon the ‘dutas’ as part of his court. He considered the ‘orarr’ as part of his personal bodyguard and information service. (Subrahmanian, 44) The ‘Secret Service’ agents also collected information on the attitude of the subjects towards the king. It is an interesting aspect of the South Indian politeness that it granted a remarkable position to spies, and considered espionage as an honourable profession. In the North India the spies were sometimes thought low grade officers. In the South they were an integral part of the administration, and are mentioned as ‘pillars of the state office’. The chara is counted by the *Agni Purana* in the list of the 21–member bureaucracy, and their characterization as ‘the eyes of the king’ gives him a remarkable and honourable position professionally though they may not have been senior in rank.

The abilities of organizing a secret service have been greatly respected in the

Arthashastra and other Sanskrit texts, both canonical and literary, which reveals the significance that was traditionally attached to this institution. This could be measured from the fact that spies were recognised as ‘eyes of the king.’ (Trivedi, 21) The Smṛti works, Sanskrit dramas and epics emphatically advocate that the institution should be constituted and nurtured with care. These references confirm the wide acceptability of ‘Secret Service’ in ancient India. A special characteristic of *Kautilya’s Arthashastra* is the uninhibited manner in which the organization of a Secret Service was recommended, and the use of secret agents for the variety of purposes described. (Trivedi, 21) The similar kind of theory is found in the *Mahabharata* which considers espionage and intelligence as application of dharma to national defence, ‘To watch other governments, feudatories, nobles and the people at large, a host of agents swarmed the land Bhisma observes.’ (Trivedi, 21) The deployment of informers was one of the prime duties of the king. They were to be set in cities, provinces and the territories of feudatories. (Trivedi, 21) Krishna had his spies in the army of Duryodhana and vice-versa. No place was free from their presence. They must remained in parks, pleasure grounds, courts, houses, shops, assemblies of the learned and among the commoners. One of the functions performed by secret agents was that which is now handled by journalists. They had to cover public reactions on the policies of the king in the cities and provinces, inclinations of secret agents possessed of various means, of envoys and agents of various kinds. The *Mahabharata* underlines the importance of the system by saying, ‘the means of protection of the state consist of the employment of spies and servants, giving them their just dues without haughtiness, producing discord and disunion among the enemy by fair or unfair means.’ The use of agents for security mentioned in the *Mudraraksasa* is an evidence of use of secret agents for the security of the state.

The historical evidence of the existence of spies along with that of *Kautilya* is found from the contemporary works of Greek historians and the *Asokan* edicts where they are called ‘purusas.’ (Trivedi, 21) The Mauryan administration required an efficient civil service is understandable because their empire was obtaining the difficult objective of a ‘chakravarti rajya’.

Dikshitar considers ‘purusas’ and ‘yuktas’ of the Mauryan administration as members of ‘subordinate and superior services’, respectively. They are similar to *gudhapurusas* of *Kautilya*. Dikshitar further uncovers support of *Kautilya* from the writings of Megasthenese, Arrian and Strabo. (Trivedi, 22) They spy out what goes

in the country and town and report everything to the king. The sixth class consists of the overseers to whom is assigned the duty of watching all that goes on, making reports secretly to the king. Some are responsibility of the city and others with that of the army. The former employed as their conjurers the courtesans of the city and the latter courtesans of the camp. The efficient and most faithful are appointed to fill these posts. Megasthenese found them numerous enough to be considered a special class of society. (Trivedi, 22) It seems that the members of this department must have been very influential and powerful so as to attract the notice of a foreign ambassador. When he learnt about their status in the administration, he referred to them by mistake as a caste engaged in 'special tasks'. Comparing the above- cited narration of Megasthenese with the provisions in the *Arthashastra*, Ghoshal suggests that the Mauryas followed the *Arthashastra* tradition in four respects, i.e. precautions in recruiting spies, countrywide espionage, safeguards against false reports by secret agents and enlistment of the services of loose women. It is possible that Mauryas used espionage for the other purposes mentioned by Kautilya, such as public propaganda, smooth working of fiscal and other departments and suppression of enemies of the state.

The *Pillar Edict IV* suggests that purusas knew the mind of the king. They inspected offices to watch the loyalty of probationary officers and maintained contact with common people so as to study public reaction with regard to the various policies of the government. (Trivedi, 22) This is the function allotted to gudhapurusas by *Kautila*. The 'prativedakas' of Asoka who are regarded as secret agents have been referred to Louis Renou to indicate 'agents of the court' sent on secret missions.(Trivedi, 23) He indentifies them with 'pravrttivyaprtas' of the *Jain* literature who to the king on the actions of Mahavira Sastri considered 'prativedakas' as reporters who were posted in the field to report on the attitude of the people.(Trivedi, 23) 'Purusas' having different grades served as liaison officers between 'rajukas' and the king. These interpretations notwithstanding the 'purusas' and 'prativedakas' appear as synonymous for 'gudhapurusas' whose duties were identical in almost all respects.

In the tradition of *Kautilya*, secret agents were used during the later periods to verify reports received by the king from diverse sources, or the activities of his officers and relations. King Yasaskara of Kashmira employed secret agents to countercheck reports that were coming to him.(Trivedi,23) There are a couple of proofs from the literary works of the post-Kusana period, which tell us that the states

continued to make comprehensive use of the Secret service.

The absence of notices on secret agents in epigraphs can perhaps be elaborated by the fact that the Indian epigraphs even till the medieval phase are almost silent on the intimate aspects of the security of the state. Consequently, a host of government servants are mentioned including 'dutas' - special messengers and envoys which had in the Post- Gupta period taken up an institutional form, secret service officers have generally been left out. Even modern governments do not mention their intelligence officers in 'special dispatches.' The only exceptions to the general absence of a reference to secret agents are the inscriptions of Sivaskandavarman and Nayapaladeva which mention 'sancharantaka' and 'gudhapurusa'. (Subramaniam. N, 103-104)

2.3 Vedic Cosmic Order and the Growth of Security System:

Like most of the Aryan Institutions that owe their origin to mythology with the direct involvement of divine power. Secret services grew out of the needs of protection originating in the philosophical concept of Rata. (Trivedi, 3) The moral order which was closely linked with the life of the Vedic Aryans, and spread through the entire socio-religious and economic structure of the society. The institution was further developed during the several centuries of political evolution until it was codified by the political genius *Kautilya*.

The 'cosmic order' was taken to the highest base of philosophical postulation when the Aryan mind was struck by the pervasive scenario and the complicated phenomenon of nature. The Vedic philosophers keenly observed the sun traversing the sky, the powerful winds, the thunder, the lightening and the darkness following each other on a set pattern. They found in it the hand of a superpower and the existence of a causative system which kept these natural phenomena from coming into collision with each other, and gave a regulated pattern to life. (Trivedi,4) They thought the 'cosmic order' as the basic principle controlling the universe and the order of earthly life.

The Ragveda portrays 'Mitra' and 'Varuna' as having got their power from the 'Cosmic Order' to which these 'guardians of universe were faithfully bound'. (Trivedi, 4)'Varuna is the Lord of the skies; all pervasive and omniscient. He is in favour of Dharma,' a concept which had replaced Rata in the early Vedic period in its glorious philosophical concept. He was 'the guardian' because "seeing that Mitra, Arayaman and Varuna are guiding us, the paths of law are fair to tread". (Trivedi, 4)

The idea of Dharma had passed through several references until its most important significance became the privileges, duties and obligations of man, and his standard of conduct as a member of the Vedic society.(Kane,1-2) The performance of these was divinely rewarded and trace passing punished.(Saletore,39)

It is the genius of the Indian mind that unlike Western thinkers it conceived the human life as bound and regulated by a social order which was raised to the level of 'Divine Law.'(Salatore & Spellman, 107-112)With the passage of time, Dharma was superimposed with ethical rules finally leading to the correct formation of laws.(Campbell James,4) Man is weak and he created the most excellent law which became the 'ksatra' and, therefore, there is nothing higher than the law. In following the principles of law, even a weak man rules the stronger. (Trivedi, 4)

At the beginning of social and political development, the society intended to use draconian hindrances which were short of an organized effective legal apparatus. There was little need for elaborate machinery for criminal investigation because the majority of people did not leave their immediate neighbourhood. It was rarely difficult to identify the culprit when a crime was committed. As the Vedic society grew into a formidable state, the internal conflict and tensions started increasing, and there was a threat to the very basis of the 'Moral Order'. The surroundings of the Vedic period were frequently disturbed. The doctrine of Dharma, the Divine Order of social creation could not get the compliance of the ethical code and moral values. Strict order was needed to keep the social system from disintegration. The existing situation demanded that fear should be cultivated in the minds of the people. Moral compulsions were not sufficient restrictions on an expanding Vedic society. It could not restrain the individual, who was driven by lust and maliciousness, sought to violate the social conventions. Greater interaction with non-Aryan groups separated the need for a more strict order. "Manu and Narada, amongst others, are haunted by the nightmare of the under-dogs upturning the whole social applecart until persuasion was reinforced by force and the ethical concepts assisted by political means of social control". (Trivedi, 5) A recourse had to be taken to the physical manifestation of the Divine Power in the form of 'Danda' (Punishment), which was carried out by the king with the help of a security organization.

Kingship (Griffiths, 30) is mentioned as an established institution in Vedic texts but according to some scholars there is no specific indication of an organized internal security system.(Trivedi,5) The roots of this system can, however, be traced

in the several expressions used for the king. The Vedic thinkers linked the origin of king to the divine pantheon; Indra and Varuna.(Trivedi, 5) Who not only watched the evil-doers and prevented them from committing misdeeds but also punished the trace passing of ‘Moral Order.’ (Trivedi, 5) In a number of epithets applied to the great god, one seems to have a solution to one of the most characteristic functions of the king in the later Vedic period viz., the guardianship of the sacred law. (Trivedi, 5)

The efforts of the political philosophers to link the origin of kingship to Divine Grace, and sometimes to the ‘Contractual aspect’ could not significantly change the basic things, i.e., ‘social disorder’, where the system itself was being threatened; where the weaker sections were terrorized by the powerful, and where it was becoming impossible to enforce ethical principles. The picture of pre-state and non-state societies effectively drawn in ancient texts as abodes of chaos justified the creation of a king. (Trivedi,6)This feature is more or less universal in Sanskrit and Pali canonical and literary texts which vividly portray a kingless state emphasizing the theory of Matsyanyaya and then maintain the king as the upholder of moral and social life of the people. The early Vedic samhitas (scripts) extensively illustrate the insecure living conditions of the pastoral Vedic community which consistently needed the divinely good deities to protect them and their material belongings not only from natural calamities but also from human marauders –dasas and dasyus. The Vedic community suffered from internal upheavals and pangs of a growing pastoral society where the life of the people had become extremely unsecured. Due to the insecurity, their material belongings were threatened. Uncivilized and semi-civilized tribes were breaking under the pressure of the Aryan culture. Crimes against person and property were beyond control. Therefore, the Vedic people lived continuously under pressures.

The concept of Varuna as the primary King who could understand every demeanor of man gradually led to the assumption by the king of his supernatural powers of watch and ward. Surrounded by the thousands of secret agents, followed by Sarama, and equipped with pasa (snares) Varuna could be credited with the qualities of the first policeman who controlled and prevented the trace passing of ‘Moral Laws’.(Trivedi, 6)

The King’s role was greatly respected in the Rgveda. He was considered the protector of the people. The Satapatha Brahma characterized the king as the upholder of Dharma and protector of people (Trivedi,6).This concept was later explained in the “Dharmasutras” admitting that the king’s most important duty was the protection of

Dharma (Religion) and social order. Thereafter, it was accepted that the king was 'rajan', pleasure of the people, and servant of his public and that this duty of protection of public was in lieu of payment of taxes by the people which is mentioned in Baudhayana; the Mahabharata, Manu and other literary works is only an extension of the basic theory of protection. This premise had been expanded by Gautama, Vasistha, Yajnavalkya, Narada, and Vishnu who unmistakably establish that man is the centre of the universe and in his upliftment, well-being and protection rests all the sciences and human institutions. (Kane, 56)

The concept of 'Danda' is one of the most political concepts which were offered for consideration by Indian political thinkers. 'Danda' was not only an old respected philosophical idea but was considered as a necessary element of state. It was raised to the level of godhead. 'Danda' in the sense of punishment is found as early as the Panchavimsa Brahmans and the various aspects concerning its philosophical and physical implications which have been dealt with the Grhyasutras, the Arthashastra, the Mahabharata, the Manusmriti, Kamandaka, Narada and the later political digest writers (Danchavimsa, Brahmans, 1-9) Kautilya's 'Danda' conveys the loyalty of means of acquisition, preservation, growth, and distribution of material wealth. The early Arthashastra writers developed 'Danda' as a significant aspect to royal office. In the Dharmasutras the king's duty of justly applying 'Danda' is sought to be supported on the ground that he has the means of ensuring security and welfare of the people. (Trivedi, 7)

All canonical and literary works, almost without exception, have declared three responsibilities or tasks to 'Danda' - (Punishment) of the criminals who oppress the weak, unguarded, old and the women; immoral act of the transgressor of 'Moral Order' and prevention of degeneration of the Vedic society. To control the civil commotion caused by violent tribal population, activities of disobedient elements or foreign aggressions this threatened the existence not only of the society but also of the state itself.

In the primitive societies and later with the growth of state system, the king's attribute of danda was executed by the 'armed man.' Security of the people was initially considered as his preservation and consequently, the army and armed police all along were concerned with the internal security and maintenance of 'social order.' The judicial authority of the king owed its origin to his control over public peace which unavoidably followed his military authority. 'Security Services' operated with the

support of informers who kept the king and senior bureaucrats posted with the development in rural and urban areas, far-flung parts of the state, forest tracts and border regions. The 'Spasas' of Varuna acted as secret agents of the king who had assumed the various attributes of the Vedic gods.

It is wrong belief that there was no provision in ancient India about security services including espionage besides what Kautilya had propounded. This belief is strengthened by an inexplicable phenomenon in that while in *the Arthashastra* we have a high water-mark of statecraft, a model of perfection, there is no other work, either contemporary or earlier which could even claim a near parallel to this magnum opus. In fact there is no evidence of systematic development of 'secret services'. This assumption is however not supported by available proof as besides the copious references to spies in the *Rigveda*, the later Samhitas and Brahman's, Kautilya himself while discussing the theory of state, principles of security and other important aspects of statecraft referred to earlier political philosophers. The material offered by *the Ramayana*, *the Mahabharata* and the literary and technical work of Pre-Christian period clearly testifies to the long history of secret services. In fact, Kautilya could be given a credit for a systematic compilation and giving correct information of the wide variety of techniques of this science. Both with regard to law and order, general administration and the intelligence system, the information provided by the *Arthashastra* is unique. It is book of practical administration unprecedented both in clarity and contents. The puranas, which contain valuable information on all aspects of human life. It also provides interesting material on the principles of law and order and intelligence. The 'Agni Purana' which is an important document of polity and socio-economic system, contains useful information on security services. References even though occasional are also available in the epigraphs. Some of the interesting information, on 'secret services' are provided by Bhasa, Sudraka, Kalidasa, Bharavi, Magha, Dandin and Bana. Besides, the repeated mention of the various techniques of espionage in literary works such as those reflected in the *Mudraraksha* is an evidence of their wide acceptability by the kings in ancient India.

2.4. Conclusion:

The chapter II is a theoretical framework. It prepares a kind of base for the discussion, explanation and analysis for the remaining chapters. In this chapter, the researcher has presented the theory of spy fiction. It includes necessary information

related to spy thriller, and various types of espionage employed by the states from 16th century to the present time in various countries. It extensively discusses how espionage, intelligence, investigation, prosecution etc. have been formed as a part of the state security. It extensively refers to the Aryan institutions, cosmic order, and kingship the concept of 'Danda'. It further presents 'Vedic Cosmic Order' as well as the origin and growth of security systems. It also includes the origin of secret services. Overall, it prepares the foundation for the discussion, analysis and explanations of the selected spy novels in the remaining chapters.

Works Cited:

"A Brief History of the Spy Fiction Genre." *Toledo Lucas County Public Library*, www.toledolibrary.org/blog/a-brief-history-of-the-spy-genre.

Berolzheimer, Fritz. *The World's Legal Philosophies*. The Lawbook Exchange, 1929.

Campbell, James S. *Law and order reconsidered*. 1969.

Chatterjee, Hiralal. *International Law and Inter-state Relations in Ancient India*. 1958.

Cœdès, George. *The Indianized States of South-East Asia*. U of Hawaii P, 1968.

Deacon, Richard. *A History of the Chinese Secret Service*. Muller, 1974.

Dvornik, Francis. *Origins of Intelligence Services: The Ancient Near East, Persia, Greece, Rome, Byzantium, the Arab Muslim Empires, the Mongol Empire, China, Muscovy*. Rutgers UP, 1974.

Encyclopaedia Britannica. 1973.

Griffiths, Sir P. *To Guard My People: The History of the Indian Police*. 1971.

Gupta, Ram K. *Political Thought in the Smṛti Literature*. 1969.

Kāṇe, Pāṇḍuraṅga V. *History of Dharmasastra: (ancient and Mediaeval Religious and Civil Law in India)*. 2006.

Rapson, Edward J., et al. *The Cambridge History of India*. CUP Archive, 1957.

Renou, Louis. *The Civilization of Ancient India*. 1959.

Saletore, Bhasker A. *Ancient Indian Political Thought and Institutions*. New York, Asia Publishing House, 1963.

Saletore, Bhasker A. *Ancient Indian Political Thought and Institutions*. New York, Asia Publishing House, 1963.

Smith, Vincent A. *The Early History of India*. Atlantic Publishers & Dist, 1999.

Subrahmanian, N. *Śaṅgam Polity: The Administration and Social Life of the Śaṅgam*

Tamils. 1996.

Subrahmanian, N. *Śaṅgam Polity: The Administration and Social Life of the Śaṅgam Tamils*. 1996.

The Brihadaranyaka Upanishad: Sanskrit Text, English Translation, and Commentary. 1985.

Trivedi, S. D. *Secret Services in Ancient India: Techniques and Operation*. 1988.

Tzu, Sun. *The Art of War*. Race Point Publishing, 2017.

Wise, David, and Thomas B. Ross. *The Espionage Establishment*. Jonathan Cape, 1968.

**CHAPTER III --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF
RUDYARD KIPLING'S *KIM* IN THE CONTEXT OF SOCIO- POLITICAL
PERSPECTIVES**

48--78

3.0. Introduction

3.1. Religious Diversity and Underlined Racism

3.2 Western Superiority

3.3. Agents of Imperialism

3.3.1. Mehbub Ali

3.3.2 Kim

3.3.3 Colonel Creighton

3.3.4. Lurgan Sahib

3.3.5. Babu

3.4. Social Conditions

3.4.1. Contrast: Respect and Hate for Religion

3.4.2. Corruption and Economic exploitation

3.4.3. Imperial Reformatations in India

3.4.4. Marginalized Women/People

3.5. Conclusion

Works Cited

3.0. Introduction:

Kim is one of the important novels written by Rudyard Kipling that has attracted attention of many scholars from all over the world. The novel gets its importance from the special touch rendered by the author employing his own experiences and learning about the then most important colonial state, India. The novel could be studied from various perspectives which the novel offers to the readers. Rudyard Kipling's love for imperialism and British rule runs in the background of the novel at the same time, reader looks at this beautiful, full of diversity, state colonized by British crown in the late nineties and early twentieth century.

Readers come across different characters through the novel, most of them are stereotypes representing Indian cultural, social and political scenarios. The novel has a special place in the readers' minds as it presents a foreign perspective through native characters. The novel gives us an account of oriental spirituality with contrast of ignorance of many sophisticated things of the modern world. It praises and comments sarcastically on various aspects of life in then India and many other issues. It also paints the picture with India's social political issues involving various native and obviously foreign characters. The colonial knowledge and power is represented by the characters like Colonel Creighton whereas the native characters represent the ignorant, superstitious world of people against the background of passive battleground over which the imperial power struggles.

3.1. Religious Diversity and Underlined Racism:

Kim is a canvas where Indian diversity, especially of religion, has been painted along with the superiority of white race of the western world on the other races. On many occasions, the author uses particular terms to introduce these religions. The novel is set on then historical conditions of colonial India against the British domination over the state. Various characters talk proudly on their races and religions. Many of them boost of it while others use it as a status symbol. Readers understand these people and their mannerism with the help of their religion, cast and race. In the very first chapter, readers find the following excerpt.

Off! Off! Let me up!' cried Abdullah, climbing up Zam-Zammah's wheel.'Thy father was a pastry-cook, Thy mother stole the ghi,' sang Kim. 'All Mussalmans fell off Zam-Zammah long ago!' 'Let me up!'

shrilled little Chota Lal in his gilt-embroidered cap. His father was worth perhaps half million sterling, but India is the only democratic land in the world. (Kipling, *Kim*, 12)

When Kim, Abdullah and Chota Lal were playing on Zam-Zammah wheel, Kim calls Abdullah a Mussalman which is not a very respectable word for Muslim and refers to Chota Lal as a wealthy Hindu boy. The game of climbing on the cannon represents the realities of then India where racial and religious race was at the top. This also pictures the social conditions of India under British rule. Through these three characters, the author represents three different conditions, social backgrounds and economies of the society. The social conflict of races and religions is shown in the novel. *Kim* represents his views of an outsider and depicts the social setting of India.

Though [Kim] was burned black as any native; though he spoke the vernacular by preference, and his mother-tongue in a clipped uncertain sing-song; though he consorted on terms of perfect equality with the small boys of the bazar; Kim was white—a poor white of the very poorest. The half-caste woman who looked after him (she smoked opium, and pretended to keep a second-hand furniture shop by the square where the cheap cabs wait) told the missionaries that she was Kim's mother's sister; but his mother had been nursemaid in a Colonel's family and had married Kimball O'Hara, a young colour-sergeant of the Mavericks, an Irish regiment. (Kipling, *Kim*, 9)

Through the presentation of society and cities, the author introduces typical life of various characters of the novel. Kipling's inclination towards white race and European superiority doesn't hide under plot setting. Kipling mentions Kim to be a white even though Kim has adopted all the habits of native Indians; his white race still seems to be kept alive by the author. Kipling also mentions Kim being Irish, where being Irish represents superiority over other races. In the position of being both at the same time insider and outsider, Kim has an easy access to both the ethnic classes.

But R17's report was the kernel of the whole affair, and it would be distinctly inconvenient if that failed to come to hand. However, God was great, and Mahbub Ali felt he had done all he could for the time being. Kim was the one soul in the world who had never told him a lie. That would have been a fatal blot on Kim's character if Mahbub had

not known that to others, for his own ends or Mahbub's business, Kim could lie like an Oriental. (Kipling, *Kim*, 33-34)

Every now and then readers find the references to two basic characteristics in the novel like being Oriental and Asiatic. The use of such terms makes this novel a colonial piece of work. The novel was written for British and on wider term European readers where it was necessary to give a clear picture of being Oriental. When author says *Kim could lie like an oriental* seems to be a derogatory remark. At the same time, it is revealed clearly that Kim is considered to be an outsider by the author.

While presenting religious diversity Kim also talks upon the clutches of religious beliefs on the common people of India. These beliefs have a firm ground of religion and religious practices. Readers could note the superstition and deep religious faith ruling the natives. Kim being an outsider is not the one who has been deeply affected by such beliefs, whereas he uses these beliefs of natives for his own benefits at various occasions.

A bull which has been offered to lord Shiva is considered a holy thing and an incarnation of God in Hindu religion, hence by feeding a holy bull people get blessings of God. At one of the occasions Kim goes out to beg for the Lama. He comes across a Hindu Kulu- lady and begs her food with his bowl.

‘That bowl is indeed! That cow bellied basket! Thou hast as much grace as the holy bull of Shiva. He has taken the best of a basket of onions already, this morn; and forsooth. I must fill thy bowl. ‘But my Yogi is not a cow,’ said the Kim gravely, making a hole with his fingers in the top of the mound. ‘A little curry is good, and a fried cake and a morsel of conserve would please him, I think.’ (Kipling, *Kim*, 23-24)

Kim who has learnt all the native mindsets and knew people very well, he not only became successful in getting the food for Lama and himself, but also the other perks from the lady. This becomes important to understand Kim in the light of the account of Kim. It is given in the beginning of the first chapter of the novel that Kim was burnt black as native. It meant not only about the skin colour but also about his native practices.

The importance of Race and religion is underlined in the discourse of Lama and Mehbub Ali. Kim takes Lama to Mehbub Ali for some help in their expedition to

Benares. Lama has no idea of whereabouts of Kim and his race or religion. Mehbub Ali gets surprised to know it and asks Lama whether he knows Kim to whom he has been calling his *Chela*. The following conversation takes place.

‘He is my disciple. He was sent, I think, to guide me to that River. Sitting under a gun was I when he came suddenly. Such things have befallen the fortunate to whom guidance was allowed. But I remember now, he said he was of this world—a Hindu.

‘And his name?’

‘That I did not ask. Is he not my disciple?’

‘His country—his race—his village? Mussalman-Sikh-Hindu-Jain—low caste or High?’

‘Why should I ask? There is neither high nor low in the middle way

(Kipling, *Kim*. 30)

The above mentioned conversation reveals the importance of race, religion and cast among the people then India. Mehbub Ali is enlightened by the Lama who doesn't belong to the place there and clarifies about his stand on race and religion. Two men hailing from completely different races having conversation, shows two different perspectives, one of a native and the other of an exotic.

Readers are also introduced to the various religions and their doctrine or nature of life. Readers have already been made clearly aware of Hindu, Mussalman and Sikh people and their social and economic conditions in then India. During the train journey, readers get to meet people of different races and religions. A Sikh is found commenting as follows:

‘That man bewell. We of the Ludhiana Sikh’ – he rolled it out sonorously – do not trouble our heads with doctrine. We fight.’ ‘My Sister’s brother’s son is naik (corporal) in that regiment,’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 40)

The Sikh community is known for their valour and fighting spirit. A considerable number of Sikh soldiers were in the service of *Sarkar*. These Sikh people are proud of their brave history and fighting spirit. Imperial rule had won several wars with the help of Sikh soldiers against many competitors like Afghans. Here, the Sikh is proud of talking about his community and their bravery. Through this, readers are introduced to one more aspect of Indian social diversity.

In one more situation, a Kulu woman makes remarks on the people who came

from Europe to India to rule over them. She comments on their foreignness and not having understood the people and customs of India.

‘That is a nut-cut [rogue],’ she said. ‘All police-constables are nut-cuts; but the police wallahs are the worst. Hai, my son, thou hast never learned all that since thou camest from Belait [Europe]. Who suckled thee?’ ‘A pahareen — a hill woman of Dalhousie, my mother. Keep thy beauty under a shade — O Dispenser of Delights,’ and he was gone. ‘These be the sort’—she took a fine judicial tone, and stuffed her mouth with pan—‘These be the sort to oversee justice. They know the land and the customs of the land. The others, all new from Europe, suckled by white women and learning our tongues from books, are worse than the pestilence. They do harm to Kings.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 93)

The Kulu woman disapproves the straight English men who came from Europe and learned the Indian languages through English books in English schools and failed to understand the customs and of the India and India itself. She marks a clear distinction between European and Indian ways of life. She also introduces the land of two different races. Here Kipling also approves her remark as an author of the novel.

The researcher finds many remarks made on white people and western culture in the novel. Kim, being a white man, is not expected to make such remarks but he has been shown as a boy who kept himself away from all the cultures hence giving him authority to observe and comment on every race he has come across.

‘Never speak to a white man till he is fed,’ said Kim, quoting a well-known proverb. ‘They will eat now, and — and I do not think they are good to beg from. Let us go back to the resting-place. After we have eaten we will come again. It certainly was a Red Bull — my Red Bull.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 100)

Here, Kipling uses a proverb to explain something to Lama. This proverb comments on a race and the characteristics of the race. Kim knows that people’s mannerism and way of life is defined by their race at some extent. By making such comment Kim highlights the underlined racism. When Kim is being convinced to attend St Xavier he, is actually being convinced to be a white man. Father Victor explains Kim that at St Xavier he will be moulded as a good man, as a white man.

‘They’ll make a man o’ you, O’Hara, at St Xavier’s—a white man, an’, I

hope, a good man. They know all about your coming, and the Colonel will see that we're not lost or mislaid anywhere on the road. I've given you a notion of religious matters,—at least I hope so,—and you'll remember, when they ask you your religion, that you're a Catholic. Better say Roman Cath'lic, tho' I'm not fond of the word.' (Kipling, *Kim*. 139)

In the above-cited example, Father Victor introduces Kim to the 'new gods' and asks him to learn mannerism that white people follow. To learn and understand such mannerism, he must attend St Xavier as people at St Xavier know all about Kim's background and his original race. He also comments that Kim has got mislaid as he has been following the mannerism of a Hindu boy for all these years and now colonel will take care of it. This part of the novel strongly underlines the distinction between the rulers and people being ruled as two different races. This could be also seen as Kipling's message to all the people who got impressed by the way of Orientals and started following their mannerism to know who they are. He calls them mislaid.

On the other hand, readers meet Creighton who seems to be more open-minded about the different cultures at the same time, he approves the existence of racism some extent in then India. While talking to Kim he asks Kim to be good to black people.

'There is a good spirit in thee. Do not let it be blunted at St Xavier's. There are many boys there who despise the black men.' 'Their mothers were bazar-women,' said Kim. He knew well there is no hatred like that of the half-caste for his brother-in-law. 'True; but thou art a Sahib and the son of a Sahib. Therefore, do not at any time be led to condemn the black men. I have known boys newly entered into the service of the Government who feigned not to understand the talk or the customs of black men. Their pay was cut for ignorance. There is no sin so great as ignorance. Remember this.' (Kipling, *Kim*. 140)

Here Creighton motivates Kim not to be a raciest and not to hate black people. He also tells Kim that he is already a good spirit and a white man and he need not hate black people to prove that he is a white man. He blames some new entrants who do not understand the talk or the customs of black men. Kim, having been raised among black people, has that ability to understand black people.

Kim, in the chapter 12, can be seen calling himself a *Sahib* while talking to Babu. Kim is working as a subordinate to Babu. Babu doesn't give him any importance. Kim thinks he has better skills than Babu to work as an undercover and Kim reminds Babu that he is a *Sahib*.

'Babuji,' said Kim, looking up at the broad, grinning face, 'I am a Sahib.'

'My dear Mister O'Hara—'

'And I hope to play the Great Game.'

'You are subordinate to me departmentally at present.'

'Then why talk like an ape in a tree? Men do not come after one from Simla and change their dress, for the sake of a few sweet words. I am not a child. Talk Hindi and let us get to the yolk of the egg. Thou art here—speaking not one word of truth in ten. Why art thou here? Give a straight answer.'

'That is so verree disconcerting of the Europeans, Mister O'Hara. You should know a heap better at your time of life.'

(Kipling, *Kim*. 255)

What makes Kim to be so authoritative? Actually, it is the race. He pulls out his racial rank to prove his superiority over Babu though he is much younger in age. In the beginning, readers have been told that Kim learnt to keep himself down and not to expose his identity being white. Towards the end of the novel, readers see a change in Kim. This could be an outcome of his stay at St Xavier. Readers also remember Lama couldn't get the race or identity in the beginning chapter. But in the later part things get changed.

"Now I look upon thee often, and every time I remember that thou art a Sahib. It is strange." (Kipling, *Kim*.311)

Lama the best companion of Kim who once couldn't tell Kim's identity now identifies him to be a *Sahib*. Kim's journey from a boy who could get blended with natives easily now could be identified as a *Sahib* by his mannerism, it is not very surprising as somewhere he has always been a white.

In one more incident, Kim tells Father Victor that Lama would raise money for Kim's study. Father Victor raises a doubt. He believes Lama to be a street beggar and doesn't think that Lama can send money.

'Powers of Darkness below!' Father Victor fumbled with the note.

‘An’ now he’s off with another of his peep-o’-day friends. I don’t know whether it will be a greater relief to me to get him back or to have him lost. He’s beyond my comprehension. How the Divil —yes, he’s the man I mean —can a street-beggar raise money to educate white boys?’

(Kipling, *Kim*.127)

Father Victor’s denial of Lama’s spirituality is startling for readers as Father Victor himself belongs to religious and spiritual world. He calls Lama a street beggar. He also expresses his skepticism and asks, can a street-beggar raise money to educate white boys? Readers can see his astonishment to why a Lama would raise money for a boy and that too for a white boy. Kim also introduces readers to various religious traits and phenomena associated to it. Readers also learn how a person’s identity is linked to one’s religion. Kim is a white boy, but has spent a good part of his life among natives and has learnt to understand people. During a conversation with Mehbub Ali, Kim makes the following comment.

Creighton heard Kim say bitterly: ‘Trust a Brahmin before a snake, and a snake before an harlot, and an harlot before a Pathan, Mahbub Ali.’

(Kipling, *Kim*. 131)

After being deceived by Mehbub Ali, Kim says that one should trust a Brahmin but not snake. He says that *harlots* are not worthy of trust as compared to a snake. He believes that one can trust a snake but not a *harlot*. Further he says even a *harlot* can be trusted but not a Pathan. Kim makes this statement to tell Mehbub Ali that he made a mistake that he trusted Mehbub Ali, who is a Pathan. In then India, people respected their own castes and religions over their lives. It was enough to say something unfavorable about one’s religion or caste to insult one. Kim skillfully uses this learnt knowledge to pay back to Mehbub Ali. In one more incident, Kim flaunts his race being a white boy. In the beginning, Kim doesn’t believe to be a white man or he is not proud of it. However, since he lived in army camp with white troops and was counseled by Father Victor, Kim started enjoying his high race.

How good the bazars must be! Coach man, drive me a little through the bazars here.’‘My order is to take thee to the school.’ The driver used the ‘thou’, which is rudeness when applied to a white man. In the clearest and most fluent vernacular Kim pointed out his error, climbed on to the box-seat, and, perfect understanding established, drove for a

couple of hours up and down, estimating, comparing, and enjoying. There is no city —except Bombay, the queen of all — more beautiful in her garish style than Lucknow, whether you see her from the bridge over the river, or from the top of the Imambar a looking down on the gilt umbrellas of the Chutter Munzil, and the trees in which the town is bedded. (Kipling, *Kim*.141)

The above-cited communication takes place when a coachman is taking Kim to the school. Kim doesn't like when coachman addresses him with the word 'Thou' which is generally not used for white man. Kim rightly points out 'mistake' of the coachman. Through this conversation readers come to know Kim's acceptance of his high race and starts enjoying the privileges coming along with it. In the seventh chapter of the novel, Kim mentions his new identity of a Sahib, an Englishman while talking to Mehbub Ali. Kim says:

'Late enough for me. I have learned to read and to write English a little at the madrissah. I shall soon be altogether a Sahib.' 'Hear him!' laughed Mahbub, looking at the little drenched figure dancing in the wet. 'Salaam — Sahib,' and he saluted ironically. (Kipling, *Kim*.153)

Kim informs Mehbub Ali that he is already a *Sahib* by race, now he only needs to learn how to read and write English. That also he is learning at *madrissah*. Kim has completely believed and accepted the newly sought race of *Sahib* a white man. Kim never misses any opportunity where he can mention his new identity of a *Sahib*. Having lived with native people for many years and having learned their hardships he came to know the benefits and privileges of being a white boy. The racial superiority could be easily seen and understood by the readers through such numerous incidents and dialogues among the various characters. A dialogue between Mehbub Ali and Kim throws light on the importance of race and high caste. The following dialogue reveals the two prominent races present in then India. One was black and the other was white.

'Is it permitted to ask whither the Heaven-born's thought might have led?' said Mahbub, with an elaborate sarcasm, smoothing his scarlet beard. 'It is permitted,' said Kim, and threw back the very tone. 'They say at Nucklao that no Sahib must tell a black man that he has made a fault.' Mahbub's hand shot into his bosom, for to call a Pathan a 'black man' [kalaadmi] is ablood-insult. Then he remembered and laughed.

‘Speak, Sahib. Thy black man hears.’ (Kipling, *Kim*.158-159)

Mehbub Ali in sarcasm asks Kim whether he (Mehbub Ali) can ask something to Kim. Mehbub Ali mentions Kim to be *Heaven-born*. This sarcasm is about the newly sought race by Kim of a white man. Kim gives him permission and also tells Mehbub Ali that at *Nucklao* people say that a *Sahib* must not tell a black man that he has made mistake. Kim calls Mehbub Ali a black man and himself a *Sahib*. Mehbub Ali gets furious with this remark made by Kim. Ali feels that calling a *Pathan*, a considerably high race, a black man is an insult. This conversation is all about the race and beliefs attached to the idea of race. Kim boosts himself to be a white man (a European) every now and then. This presents the social situation of then India where two races were struggling to dominate each other. Kim in the beginning of the novels appears to be a white boy who has been raised as native. Kim adopted the mannerism of the native people and sun had tanned him to be a perfect native boy.

‘Lurgan Sahib! O Lurgan Sahib! Is it an order that thy servant does not speak to me?’

‘It is an order.’ The voice came from behind him and he started.

‘Very good. But remember,’ he muttered, as he resought the quilt, ‘I will beat thee in the morning. I do not love Hindus.’

(Kipling, *Kim*.175)

However with the development of novel, readers see him emerging as a white boy in his comments and remarks as if he was never raised among natives. His proud feeling of being a white boy misleads the readers to decide his race. This could be decided on the basis of his birth or the way he was raised and the way he adopted native customs. When Kim stays at Lurgan, he meets a boy who is Hindu. Without having any personal grudges with the Hindu boy Kim still threatens the boy and says that ‘*I will beat thee in the morning. I do not love Hindus*’. One could see Kim employing his racial superiority over a Hindu boy. This amazing change in Kim could be seen from a boy who always feared white people to a boy who feels proud to be a white boy.

In the same chapter, Kim reasserts his superiority by uttering following sentences. The researcher can sense immense confidence and proud feeling in Kim while saying so.

‘This with a beggar from the bazar might be good, but — I am a Sahib and the son of a Sahib and, which is twice as much more beside, a

student of Nucklao. Yess' (here he turned to English), 'a boy of St Xavier's. Damn Mr Lurgan's eyes! (Kipling, *Kim*. 176)

Kim feels that there is no comparison between a *Sahib* and a beggar from the bazar. He forgets that for Lama he had begged on the road. He mentions himself to be a *Sahib* which is alone a great thing besides being a student of St Xavier. He advocates himself to be far superior to a Hindu boy at Lurgan Sahib's home. In one more incident, Kim reasserts his race and starts defending his actions on its basis. Lama and Kim have a conversation where Lama asks Kim to help people and cure them with his skills but warns him that he must take care that the person will be cured. Lama gets suspicious of Kim's skills to cure people as he could not do so with a *Maratha* man in the train.

'To abstain from action is well — except to acquire merit.'

'At the Gates of Learning we were taught that to abstain from action was unbecoming a Sahib. And I am a Sahib.'

(Kipling, *Kim*.245)

Lama believes that Kim has the skills to cure people but he is not perfect yet. Lama advises Kim to learn the skills properly and then use them to cure people. Upon this Kim says that to abstain from action doesn't suit a Sahib, a white man. It implies that *Sahib*-a white man believes in action and performing tasks. If one is not doing so one is not a Sahib. Since he is a Sahib, he cannot abstain from the action. He defends his action by calling himself a Sahib.

3.2 Western Superiority:

British crown has ruled almost all over the world by colonizing numerous states. Ruling over someone is considered a symbol of superiority. Many states try to establish such superiority for their own interest. The present novel is set in colonized India where British government is in rule. It is obvious that they always claimed their superiority over Indian race which was uneducated, uncivilized and ignorant state for British people. Kipling, being an overt supporter of imperial rule over India, doesn't miss out to address superiority of western people especially British people in the novel.

The novel cites various conversations commenting on the superiority of colonial power and knowledge by underrating Indian socio-economic conditions in

the very first chapter The researcher clearly finds the curator, an Englishman making remarks on India's situation.

‘And thou art sure of thy road?’ said the Curator.

‘Oh, for that one but asks a question and pays money, and the appointed persons dispatch all to the appointed place. That much I knew in my lamasery from sure report,’ said the lama proudly.

‘And when dost thou go?’ The curator smiled at the mixture of old-world piety and modern progress that is the note of India today.

(Kipling, *Kim*. 20)

The above conversation takes place between old Tibetan Lama and an English curator. The curator is said to be amused by the present state of India where all the oriental and olden beliefs are still in practice and at the same time the new reformations are being introduced by British Indian

3.3. Agents of Imperialism:

3.3.1. Mehbub Ali:

Mehbub Ali is an Afghan Muslim and a horse trader. He makes lots of money in buying and selling horses. Most importantly he is an undercover agent, a spy of imperial government with official code name ‘C.25’. He seems to be strengthening the imperial rule with his services. The way of ruling in colonial states could be learnt in the novel *Kim*. How the imperial power uses natives and foreigners in fortifying their rule and protecting it from other competitors.

Mehbub Ali has skills in understanding the worth of people. In the very first chapter, readers see Mehbub Ali recognizing Kim as a potential secret agent that is why he selected Kim to deliver an important message to Umbala.

‘And if thou wilt carry a message for me as far as Umbala. I will give the money. It concerns a horse –a white stallion which I have sold to an officer upon the last time I returned from the passes. But then – stand nearer and hold up hands as begging –the pedigree of the white stallion was not fully established, and that officer, who is now at Umaballa, bade me make it clear.’ ‘So the message to that officer will be: ‘The pedigree of the white stallion is fully established.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 28)

Mehbub Ali wants to warn about the Russian troops that are preparing to attack the imperial power and snatch some part of colonial India, a fruit bearing state. Mehbub Ali chooses Kim, who is accompanied with Lama, to pass on the message to an English officer. Kim is not aware of the underlined truth of the messages that Mehbub Ali has asked Kim to pass on. Mehbub Ali has asked Kim for the task as he believes that Kim is white race and not a native. Kim has all the skills of a native to do the job. Ali employs Kim as an undercover agent for imperial power. When Kim is being trained to be a spy, Colonel Creighton and Mehbub Ali share following conversation.

‘Oh, that is nothing,’ said the horse-dealer. ‘Men are like horses. At certain times they need salt, and if that salt is not in the mangers they will pick it up from the earth. He has gone back to the Road again for a while. The madrissak wearied him. I knew it would. Another time, I will take him upon the Road myself. Do not be troubled, Creighton Sahib. It is as though a polo-pony, breaking loose, ran out to learn the game alone.’

‘Then he is not dead, think you?’

‘Fever might kill him. I do not fear for the boy otherwise. A monkey does not fall among trees.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 150)

Mehbub Ali in the above dialogue takes up the responsibility to train Kim and bring him back to *Madrisha* (the school) where he will be trained further to be a clever spy. Mehbub Ali is trying to prove his worth for Imperial Government while Colonel Creighton is trying to impress his superiors by recruiting a smart spy like Kim. Mehbub Ali is working as a handler to Imperial government where he needs to furnish necessary information and people required for the job of the government. Mehbub Ali has been given a task to convince Kim to be a spy for imperial government. Mehbub Ali has been asked to train Kim and manipulate him to be a spy. Mehbub Ali as an obedient agent of the Imperial power throws himself in the task. Following conversation takes place where Mehbub Ali at his best to convince Kim.

‘I said,’ growled Mahbub Ali to himself, ‘I said it was the pony breaking out to play polo. The fruit is ripe already —except that he must learn his distances and his pacings, and his rods and his compasses. Listen now. I have turned aside the Colonel’s whip from thy skin, and that is no small service.’

‘True.’ Kim pulled serenely. ‘That is true.’

‘But it is not to be thought that this running out and in is any way good.’

(Kipling *Kim*.155)

Mehbub Ali tells Kim that he has made a great favour on Kim by saving him from the anger of Colonel Creighton who is immensely angry with Kim after he ran away from *Madriissah*. Mehbub Ali wishes Kim to repay his favour by becoming a spy. Mehbub Ali plays an important role of being an agent of the government. He is the person who has provided all the important information to the officers wherever it was necessary. Readers also come to know about Mehbub Ali’s pure professionalism as a spy when he tells Kim that he sells and buys information.

‘And what did he?’ for Kim had bitten off the conversation. ‘Dost thou give news for love, or dost thou sell it?’ Kim asked. ‘I sell and — I buy.’ Mahbub took a four- anna piece out of his belt and held it up. ‘Eight!’ said Kim, mechanically following the huckster instinct of the East. Mahbub laughed, and put away the coin. ‘It is too easy to deal in that market, Friend of all the World. Tell me for love. Our lives lie in each other’s hand.’ (Kipling *Kim*.157-158)

Kim complains Mehbub Ali for keeping him in darkness about the news that Kim delivered to Umbala. When Kim asks Mehbub Ali, why had Mehbub Ali kept him in darkness, then Mehbub Ali reveals that he did it for money. Mehbub Ali indirectly tells that he is an undercover agent of the government and for the imperial power he does the trade of information. This conversation denotes the identity of Mehbub Ali a spy and an agent of the government. Mehbub Ali knows Kim well. When Kim runs away from school and gets back to his vagabond life on the roads, Colonel Creighton gets angry and asks Mehbub Ali to get Kim back. Mehbub Ali handles the situation very skilfully and the following conversation takes place.

‘There is no holding the young pony from the game,’ said the horse-dealer when the Colonel pointed out that vagabonding over India in holiday time was absurd. ‘If permission be refused to go and come as he chooses, he will make light of the refusal.

Then who is to catch him?

Colonel Sahib, only once in a thousand years is a horse born so well fitted for the game as this our colt. And we need men.’

(Kipling, *Kim*.195)

Upon Colonel Creighton's complain about Kim, Mehbub Ali reacts very carefully and exhibits his skills at handling people. Being a horse dealer he uses his knowledge and deals with the situation. He tells Colonel Creighton that Kim is like a young pony and if we put him under pressure and make him forcibly obey them he may slip out of hand and get uncontrolled. As Mehbub Ali knows Kim and Kim's potential strength very well, so he knows Kim's worth as well. He advises Colonel Creighton that Kim could be the most important and productive agent for the British government hence he must be dealt with utmost care.

Mehbub Ali imparts important lessons to Kim and moulds him to be a great spy. He tells Kim how one should not run away from small things and see the bigger picture. He also tells him that things may seem pretty easy and straight forward but they are not so. 'That soldier is a small fish,' Mahbub Ali explained, 'but in time we shall catch the larger one. He only sells oxen at two prices — one for himself and one for the Government — which I do not think is a sin.' 'Why could not I take away the little book and be done with it?'

'Then he would have been frightened, and he would have told his master. Then we should miss, perhaps, a great number of new rifles which seek their way up from Quetta to the North. The Game is so large that one sees but a little at a time.' (Kipling, *Kim*.197)

When Mehbub Ali and Kim are spying in the house of a fat Commissariat sergeant Mehbub Ali copies things from a ledger and keeps the book back at its place. Kim asks to take the book with them. On this, the above mentioned conversation takes place where Mehbub Ali is giving some important lessons to Kim. Mehbub Ali explains why they need to keep the book back so that the sergeant will not get suspicious and tell his master. This is the way the enemy could get alert and one may miss the bigger picture. Here Mehbub Ali is not only a spy but also a trainer for Kim.

In one more incident, readers can observe Mehbub Ali training Kim for making papers to send information to Colonel Creighton. Mehbub Ali tells Kim what and how to explain information to their superiors.

'It must hold everything that thou hast seen or touched or considered. Write as though the Jung-i-Lat Sahib himself had come by stealth with a vast army out setting to war.'

'How great an army?'

‘Oh, half a Lakh of men.’

‘Folly! Remember how few and bad were the wells in the sand. Not a thousand thirsty men could come nearby here.’

‘Then write that down — also all the old breaches in the walls and whence the firewood is cut — and what is the temper and disposition of the King. (Kipling, *Kim*. 198)

Mehbub Ali advises Kim about the document and everything that he has seen or touched as if Colonel Creighton was there and has seen it everything himself. The minute details to be recorded. When Kim asks with how many men the colonel could come here? Mehbub Ali gives an example of his sharp observation skills as an agent. Mehbub tells Kim that not many men can come there as very few well were there in the sand. It means there are no enough water supplies hence a great number of army cannot stay there.

When Mehbub Ali finds that Kim has been trained enough to be an agent, he informs Colonel Creighton where Mehbub Ali advocates that Kim can be assigned a task.

‘The pony is made — finished — mouthed and paced, Sahib!

From now on, day by day, he will lose his manners if he is kept at tricks. Drop the rein on his back and let go,’ said the horse-dealer. ‘We need him.’

‘But he is so young, Mahbub — not more than sixteen — is he?’

‘When I was fifteen, I had shot my man and begot my man, Sahib.’

‘You impenitent old heathen!’ Creighton turned to Lurgan. The black beard nodded assent to the wisdom of the Afghan’s dyed scarlet. (Kipling, *Kim*. 200-201)

Mehbub Ali, Colonel Creighton and Lurgan discuss progress of Kim, where Mehbub Ali informs that Kim is ready for an assignment. He also warns that if Kim is given further training which is not necessary, Kim may lose his natural traits and be a weak chain man. Mehbub Ali is the first character in the novel that has identified Kim’s potential to be an agent. When Colonel Creighton raises a doubt about Kim’s age Mehbub Ali promptly give his own example how at the age of fifteen he had shot his man to which Lurgan gives consent.

Mehbub Ali is the important person in Kim’s journey of adventures. Mehbub Ali gave Kim the first task of taking message to Umbala. It was Mehbub Ali who

introduced Kim to the Great Game and trained him from time to time. It was Mehub Ali who found Kim to be a perfect spy and helped Colonel Creighton to tame vagabond to be an agent. Mehub Ali did everything that he could do to as a loyal secret service agent of British Indian Government.

3.3.2 *Kim*:

Kim, the protagonist of the novel without any intention serves the imperial power as an undercover agent. An undercover agent should have necessary qualities that are needed to be good at disguise and telling lies to hide their intentions. Kim exhibits such qualities at various occasions and confesses it.

‘Mehub puffed his hookah in silence. Then he began almost whispering: ‘Umballa is on the road to Benares-if indeed ye two go there.’

‘Tck! Tck! I tell you thee he does not know how to lie – as we two know.’

(Kipling, *Kim*. 28)

Mehub Ali and Kim both, working as agents of the imperial power ruling over India, have a conversation. The conversation reveals the confessions of Kim stating both of them to be good liars and Lama to be innocent one who does not know how to lie. Lie, deceit and power have always been at the root of imperialism and its rule over colonized states. As the British people entered India in the disguise of traders and later became rulers.

In the beginning, Kim is not happy to go to school and learn something. He actually loves his vagabond life. When he is forced to get trained by Colonel Creighton, Kim starts realizing his worth and his skills to become one of the natives easily. Later on, Kim starts working as a secret service agent. Kim serves as an important agent who has been assigned task to collect information of Great Game.

‘Art thou only a beginner?’ said E23, laboring literally for the dear life, as he slid out of his body-wrappings and stood clear in the loin-cloth while Kim splashed in a noble caste mark on the ash-smeared brow. ‘But two days entered to the Game, brother,’ Kim replied. ‘Smear more ash on the bosom.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 233)

Kim uses his knowledge of castes and religious practices of natives’ men to save the agent E23. He smears ash on the forehead the agent which considered as the

sign of noble and higher caste and respected in the society. This could help agent E23 to disguise and save himself. Kim has now become fully trained agent who can handle critical conditions and disguise himself among common folk. He also has ability to send messages in coded language. This makes him a valuable jewel for secret service of British Indian government.

3.3.3 Colonel Creighton:

Readers meet colonel Creighton in the beginning as a good man who cares about Kim as a white boy and is seriously interested in Kim's overall development. When colonel learns about Kim's ability to get easily mixed up with the natives and follow their mannerisms he sees a potential undercover agent or a spy in Kim. Colonel then wishes to train Kim to be a spy.

‘Yes, and thou must learn how to make pictures of roads and mountains and rivers, to carry these pictures in thine eye till a suitable time comes to set them upon paper. Perhaps someday, when thou art a chain-man, I may say to thee when we are working together: “Go across those hills and see what lies beyond.” Then one will say: “There are bad people living in those hills who will slay the chain-man if he be seen to look like Sahib.” What then?’

‘Is this the Hand of Friendship to avert the Whip of Calamity?’ laughed the Colonel.

‘See how wise is the boy. He would go back to the Road again, as I said. Not knowing yet thy trade —’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 151)

When Mehbub Ali reads out the message sent by Kim to Mehbub Ali for help, Colonel Creighton comes to know about Kim's smartness. In the letter, Kim doesn't make his name or whereabouts open and uses the allusions that were known to Mehbub Ali. Colonel Creighton points out specialty and appreciates Kim's cleverness. Here, Colonel is happy as he has got a spy who could easily be a part of the natives and get information for the government.

3.3.4. Lurgan Sahib:

Lurgan is one of the important characters in the novel *Kim*. He is often addressed as Lurgan Sahib in the novel. He is an ally of Colonel Creighton who helps him in training Kim. Readers come to know that he lives in Simla and runs a shop of

strange things like masks and mechanical toys. With the development of the novel, readers come to know that Kim had been sent to Lurgan with a purpose. Lurgan trains Kim for the secret service for imperial government. Thus, Lurgan is also an important agent of the imperial power ruling India.

Lurgan Sahib's first duty is to convince Kim for secret service employment. Kim being a vagabond it was difficult to bring him under the impression that secret service is an important and noble employment and not everyone gets to be a part of it. Lurgan does that with his unique skills.

‘Then what is the Babu's pay if so much is put upon his head?’

‘Eighty — perhaps a hundred — perhaps a hundred and fifty rupees; but the pay is the least part of the work. From time to time, God causes men to be born — and thou art one of them — who have a lust to go abroad at the risk of their lives and discover news — today it may be of far-off things, tomorrow of some hidden mountain, and the next day of some near-by men who have done a foolishness against the State. These souls are very few; and of these few, not more than ten are of the best. Among these ten I count the Babu, and that is curious. How great, therefore, and desirable must be a business that brazens the heart of a Bengali!’ (Kipling, *Kim*.187)

Lurgan in the above-mentioned conversation tells Kim that for a secret service, agent's salary is the least important thing. It is God who bestows such responsibility only upon selected people. He also informs him that there are a few fortunate souls who are agents of secret service who fight against people who are working against the state. For Lurgan, Babu is one of such souls. This conversation is an attempt to persuade Kim to be an agent and help the state fight against such people who wish to overthrow the government. Lurgan's method of training is unique and very effective. That is why Colonel Creighton relies upon him.

Kim stamped with vexation when the lad made his boast good.

‘If it were men — or horses,’ he said, ‘I could do better. This playing with tweezers and knives and scissors is too little.’

‘Learn first — teach later,’ said Lurgan Sahib. ‘Is he thy master?’

‘Truly. But how is it done?’

(Kipling, *Kim*. 184)

Here is an excerpt of a conversation between Lurgan Sahib and Kim. Kim tries

to outsmart Lurgan in identification of various precious stones as a part of his training. Kim complains that identifying people is easier than stones and he could have performed far better if it were men or horses. Lurgan Sahib advises him to focus on learning than talk. Lurgan also gives an example of Hindu boy who could easily identify the stones. Lurgan Sahib indirectly trains Kim to learn new skills by practice and he must be able to identify even stones if required as a secret service agent of imperial government.

Lurgan has been assigned an important task of training Kim and he seems to be doing it meticulously. This assignment given to him proves that he is one of the important people for the government.

3.3.5. Babu:

Babu is an important secret service agent of the imperial government. He has an official secret service number and letter for the same. His complete name is Hurree Chunder Mukherjee. Kim is supposed to work as a subordinate to Babu, so he takes interest in Kim's training. Babu represents a stereotype character observed in most of the colonial and post-colonial novels. Babu represents those people who try to be a part of British Empire and be one of them by following their mannerism. Babu being an agent of imperial government could be seen dealing with Kim every now and then. The following example clearly makes readers understand the same.

‘I think,’ said the Babu heavily, lighting a cigarette, ‘I am of opinion that it is most extraordinary and efficient performance. Except that you had told me I should have opined that— that— that you were pulling my legs. How soon can he become approximately efficient chain-man? Because then I shall indent for him.’

‘That is what he must learn at Lucknow.’

‘Then order him to be jolly-dam’-quick. Good-night, Lurgan.’ The Babu swung out with the gait of a bogged cow. (Kipling, *Kim*. 186)

In the above-mentioned conversation Babu and Lurgan Sahib discuss Kim's status for secret service agency as an agent. Babu in his typical English pronunciation comments that Kim has potentiality of becoming an efficient agent of secret service. He enquires and instructs Lurgan to make Kim to learn and earn skills that an agent requires at the earliest. He also mentions his responsibility of indenting Kim in the service. This could be seen as Babu's reassertion proving him one of the important

persons in the secret service agency. Babu also makes efforts to bring Kim in secret service and doesn't miss any opportunity to impress Kim. In the below mentioned excerpt from the novel Babu could be seen rewarding Kim for his performance.

‘That is reward of merit for your performance in character of that holy man. You see, you are so young you think you will last forever and not take care of your body. It is great nuisance to go sick in the middle of business. I am fond of drugs myself, and they are handy to cure poor people too. These are good Departmental drugs — quinine and so on. I give it you for souvenir. Now good-bye.

(Kipling, *Kim*. 190)

Babu offers a drug box to Kim and tells him that it is a reward of Kim's performance. Babu further says that now he (Kim) is young and if he doesn't take care of himself one day he may fall ill which is obviously not good for business (secret service). Babu also praises Kim and says that Kim likes to help people. Babu handovers Kim, a kit of drugs, which is costly one. This could be seen as bait that Babu is offering Kim. Babu desperately wants Kim to be in the secret service for his ability to get easily mixed up with the natives. Lurgan Sahib as well points out Babu's ambition to be a member of Royal Society. He compares Babu to a typical clerk in the office who wants to be in good books of Sahib and earn favour. Lurgan says:

‘Babus are very curious,’ said Lurgan meditatively. ‘Do you know what Hurree Babu really wants? He wants to be made a member of the Royal Society by taking ethnological notes. I tell you, I tell him about the lama everything which Mahbub and the boy have told me. Hurree Babu goes down to Benares — at his own expense, I think.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 202)

The above comment made by Luragn about Babu is quite apt. Babu has been presented as one of the stereotype characters what we see in colonial novels. The author mentions Babu's peculiar accent and his pronunciation of certain words and sentences. The readers can easily get Babu's loyalty towards a foreign government ruling his own people is out of his own interest. Babu also accepts his stereotype character and says All we Babus talk English to show off. (Kipling, *Kim*.128).

3.4. Social Conditions:

The researcher sees a typical India, bearing a number of castes, religions and social structures, presented by Kipling in the novel *Kim*. The India then colonized by imperial power was going through the development that was brought in by the imperial power to ease their rule under the disguise of development. India was adopting the modern changes, at the same time it was under the grip of century old upper and lower caste systems. People were highly religious and governed by social restrictions of cast system and blind faith in the religion. Readers come across all kinds of people during the journey of *Kim*.

3.4.1. Contrast: Respect and Hate for Religion:

Religion has been one of the important factors in the rise and fall of most of the countries. Indian social conditions were too nurtured by religious beliefs and practices. In then India, religion dominated lives of people who were used for betterment as well as exploitation of common people. In the present novel, readers get a foreign perspective towards Indian social conditions and religious impact on it.

Many of the fraud saints and *Sadhus* exploit poor people and try to keep them oppressed for their own interest. People respect religion but at the same time they were fed up of the exploitation faced in day-to- day life. Readers come across many characters in the novel who boldly comment on such exploitation. When Kim goes out to beg for Lama in the very first chapter of the novel readers find a Hindu lady expressing her anger for priests and young tigers. This is quite unusual where a Hindu lady commenting of a religious figure.

‘Nay. Said Kim proudly. ‘There is a new priest in the city-a man such as I have never seen.’ ‘Old priest-young tiger,’ said the woman angrily. ‘I am tired of new priests! They settle on our wares like flies. Is the father of my son a well of charity to give to all who ask?’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 23)

The lady expresses her frustration as she has faced many priests, may be most of them were fraud or pretentious priests. She doesn't like to donate hard earned things every now and then to religious people. She indirectly compares the priests to young tigers who attack farmers and cultivators in the farm and destroy their crop. She compares the losses caused by a wild animal and a priest, the manner may be different. At the same time, readers also find many people who respect the religious

figures and offer them all the help in respect of the religion. When Kim and Lama head to Umballa and try to get into the train full of people. For example:

‘I do not fear,’ said the Lama. ‘Have you room within for two?’

‘There is no room for a mouse.’ Shrilled the wife of a well to do cultivator.

‘Oh mother of my son, we can make space,’ said the blue turbaned husband. ‘pick up the child is is a holy man.’

(Kipling, *Kim*. 38)

In the above- cited piece of conversation, readers could see the contrast where the lady is not pleased by Lama trying to get into the train whereas her husband is kind and asks his wife to pick up the child and make some room so that Lama, a holy man gets into the train. Such disparity is quite obvious at various occasions in the novel. Superstitions were also one of the common problems associated with religious belief. It was believed that religious monks and priests have supernatural powers and can perform miracles. Such belief was purposefully disseminated among people for their own interest. In the eleventh chapter Kim meets a *Jat*, a Sikh man whose son is down with fever. Readers see *Jat* worried and anxious for his son. When Kim has a dialogue with him *Jat* shares following dialogue with him.

‘Jandiala — Jullundur? Oho! Then we be neighbours in some sort, as it were.’ He nodded tenderly to the wailing child in his arms.

‘Whom dost thou serve?’

‘A most holy man at the Temple of the Tirthankers.’

‘They are all most holy and — most greedy,’ said the *Jat* with bitterness. ‘I have walked the pillars and trodden the temples till my feet are flayed, and the child is no whit better.

(Kipling, *Kim*. 217)

Jat tells Kim that he serves a holy man at a temple. He describes the priests to be most holy man and greedy at the same time. Since he has been serving holy men at the temple he must have observed their conduct closely and his comment on such priests cannot be ignored. He also mentions that he had visited to many temples for his son to find a cure but got disappointed, here readers could see *Jat’s* belief in the religious people and their ability to cure his ill son is out of superstitions spread among common poor people. Kim helps the boy to recover from Malaria with the help of drug kit. The father believes that Kim has some holy powers of healing.

‘Remember,’ — Kim bent over the child —. ‘this trouble may come again.’

‘Not if thou hast the proper spell,’ said the father.

‘But in a little while we go away.’

(Kipling, *Kim*. 226)

In the above-mentioned conversation, the father of ill son exhibits his utmost faith in Kim as a holy man. When Kim tries to warn the father about return of fever the father says that the fever would not come back if he (Kim) had spelled it properly. This reveals that the father believed that Kim has casted some spell on his son to cure him.

3.4.2. Corruption and Economic exploitation:

The colonized India was not spared from corruption and economic exploitation as presented in *Kim* by Rudyard Kipling. The people were not educated and were unaware of many modern systems. People who were employed in imperial services at various positions as clerks in offices and ticket checkers and issues at railway stations were corrupt and were looting ignorant people. When Kim goes to ticket booking window and asks for a ticket to Umballa the ticket issuer deliberately gives him ticket to next station which is just six miles away but charges him the ticket to Umballa. In this way the ticket issuer tries to earn some money illegally.

Kim asked and paid for a ticket to Umballa. A sleepy clerk grunted and flung out a ticket to the next station, just six miles distant. ‘Nay,’ said Kim, scanning it with grin. ‘This may serve for farmers, but I live in the city of Lahore. ‘It was cleverly done Babu. Now give the ticket to Umballa.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 38)

Kim being trained by all the tricks and practices of a city like Lahore gets it quickly and asks clerk to give away the right ticket. He also warns the clerk that he can trick poor farmers but not someone from Lahore city. In the same chapter, the readers observe another character commenting on hypocrite money lender. Then India had no proper or widespread structure of economic institution like banks. People would borrow money from money lender who would charge heavy interest. When such a money lender tries to get into train and says:

‘Enter! Enter!’ cried a fat Hindu money lender, his folded account book in a cloth under his arm. With an oily smirk: ‘It is well to be kind

to the poor.’ ‘Ay, at seven per cent a month with a mortgage on the unborn calf,’ said a young Dogra soldier going south on leave; and they all laughed. (Kipling, *Kim*. 39)

This comment on the fat money lender could be seen as a common reaction of people to the exploitation of moneylender who would charge high interest as much as seven percent besides having everything under mortgage. Such money lenders would take undue advantages of poor and rob them in their necessities. Here, readers observe Kipling as a keen observer and well known to the realities of then India. Kim becomes a way to expose the social setting of India under imperial rule. In one more situation, readers find instances where police were corrupt and loot people under the threat of government action. When Kim and Lama are on journey to find Holy River they come across a few policemen who stop them.

‘Halt!’ he cried in impressive English. ‘Know ye not that there is a takkus of two annas a head, which is four annas, on those who enter the Road from this side-road? It is the order of the Sirkar, and the money is spent for the planting of trees and the beautification of the ways.’ ‘And who was he? Leave the boy alone,’ cried a senior constable, immensely delighted, as he squatted down to smoke his pipe in the veranda. ‘He took a label from a bottle of belaittee-pani [soda-water], and, affixing it to a bridge, collected taxes for a month from those who passed, saying that it was the Sirkar’s order. Then came an Englishman and broke his head. Ah, brother, I am a town-crow, not a village-crow!’

(Kipling, *Kim*. 76)

The policemen stops Kim and Lama and asks them to pay a tax that government has newly introduced for the beautification of the road and tree plantation. The tax was two *annas* per person. The policeman asks Kim to pay four *annas* two for Kim and two for Lama. Kim having learnt all the tricks and exploitation acts at the city of Lahor refuses to pay. When the senior policeman comes to know that the boy is smart he lets him go. Kim warns them of action from Englishman and also warns them not to fool him as he is not a village crow who doesn’t know the ways of the world.

With the above cited instance presented in the novel, readers can learnt about corruption being a serious social issue that people of India faced under the British

rule. Common people especially uneducated people from villages would fall prey to such exploitations.

3.4.3. Imperial Reforms in India:

Rudyard Kipling has always supported and justified imperial rule over colonized states like India. It has been a matter of great debate whether imperial rule brought any change in living standards of people colonized by them. One cannot deny that the reforms and introductions of modern facilities like train have made certain impact on the social structures and systems. Train journey of Kim and Lama becomes an instance for social equality cultivated by such modern amenities. When Kim and Lama board on a train journey they meet people from different castes and religions travelling in the same train.

‘I say,’ began the money lender, pursing his lips, ‘that there is not one rule of right living which these te- rain do not cause us to break. We sit, for example, side by side with all caste and peoples.’

(Kipling, *Kim*. 39)

This comment by the money lender could be seen from Kipling’s perspective as a stern supporter of imperial rule. Here Kipling is tries to the rule and certifies it for bringing social upliftment by offering people right to equality. In the eleventh chapter Kim and *Jat* a *Sikh* man are travelling by the train where *Jat* appreciates the Train as a facility provided by government.

‘Then, in the name of the Gods, let us take the fire-carriage. My son is best in his mother’s arms. The Government has brought on us many taxes, but it gives us one good thing — the te-rain that joins friends and unites the anxious. A wonderful matter is the te-rain.’

(Kipling, *Kim*.229)

The *Jat* says that the train is a wonderful thing that government has given to the people of India which joins the friends and unites people who are anxious to meet. His praising words for imperial government’s introduction of modern facilities highlight Kipling’s support for British government. This remark is also important where a *Jat* who represents a common man in then India comments on the various taxes levied by the British Indian Government.

In the second chapter, readers come across another *Sikh* man commenting on people in the service of *Sirkar* (Imperial rule). The British

government recruited natives in their army irrespective of their castes and religion. Though the attempt was not focused on to bring equality among all the castes but to rule the vast country easily.

‘Nay, but all who serve the Sirkar with weapons in their hands are, as it were, one brotherhood. There is one brotherhood of the cast, but beyond that again- she looked round timidly- the bond of the pulton- the Regiment-eh?’ ‘My brother is in a Jat Regiment,’ Said the cultivator. ‘Dogras be good men.’ (Kipling, *Kim*. 40)

The opportunity to serve imperial rule, in various regiments like Sikh regiment, Dogra regiment, Jat regiment has been presented as an opportunity to get social equality. Soldiers working in various regiments were equally treated irrespective of their caste status. The imperial government was successful in bringing a sense of equality among soldiers as they serve the imperial rule which considers all soldiers as one.

This could be seen as the major impact of imperial rule over Indian social structure and people’s mindset. It could be seen as the beginning the various social reformations that were brought into later.

3.4.4. Marginalized Women/People:

The condition of women in then India was not very pleasant and comfortable. As compared to western countries, Indian women had more restrictions and social acceptance. Women were mocked for their being expressive, ability to think and make decisions. Kipling presents us this reality at many places throughout the novel. Readers also come to know the hypocrite customs of the society firmly rooted in then India putting restrictions on women’s liberty.

But there are always those of the old rock who hold by the use of their forefathers; and, above all, there are always the old women — more conservative than the men — who toward the end of their days go on a pilgrimage. They, being withered and undesirable, do not, under certain circumstances, object to unveiling. After their long seclusion, during which they have always been in business touch with a thousand outside interests, they love the bustle and stir of the open road, the gatherings at the shrines, and the infinite possibilities of gossip with like-minded dowagers. Very often it suits a long suffering family that a

strong-tongued, iron-willed old lady should disport herself about India in this fashion; for certainly pilgrimage is grateful to the Gods. (Kipling, *Kim*.. 80)

The author makes comment on the grave social issues of Indian society. Women, kept in *Purdah*, miss the most important years of their life where they should have followed their will and do as they like. Women in India get an opportunity to go out and see the world without restrictions of *Purdah* only in the old age, when they become undesirable. Kim's remark on the same could be seen as a remark by a foreigner and outsider.

It is a shame and a scandal that a poor woman may not go to make prayer to her Gods except she be jostled and insulted by all the refuse of Hindustan—that she must eat gali [abuse] as men eat ghee. But I have yet a wag left to my tongue—a word or two well-spoken that serves the occasion. And still am I without my tobacco! Who is the one-eyed and luckless son of shame that has not yet prepared my pipe?' (Kipling, *Kim*. 91)

The *Kulu* woman meets the readers often in the novel where she has been described as covered by veil which was meant to protect her modesty. Particularly women from lower cast had more restrictions for they cannot go to make prayers to their Gods. This also indicates that even the Gods had been distributed among the people from different casts and classes. This marginalization of women and lower caste people in then India had been a one of the biggest social issues. Readers also come across derogatory remarks on native women in the eleventh chapter where a *Jat* comments that women do like to overhear secrets and gossip.

'Humph! I have no desire to mix with chance-met wastrels. My ears are not long. I am not a woman wishing to overhear secrets.' The *Jat* slid himself heavily into a far corner. (Kipling, *Kim*. 231)

This generalized comment on women seems to be formed out of common observations, yet it cannot be justified. This comment comes from a native character in the novel. This comment reveals that women had been given secondary position in the society to men in the Indian society. Moreover, the notion that woman was a birth machine and had the only responsibility as a wife to bear kids for husband, was strongly rooted in the society. While Kim and Lama are on the journey to find the

holy river they come across a wealthy *Rajputani* woman who is on the way to her daughter's home. She converses with Kim.

'We priests! Thou art not yet old enough to —' She checked the joke with another laugh.

'Believe me, now and again, we women, O priest, think of other matters than sons. Moreover, my daughter has borne her man-child.'

'Thither go we.'

'Doubly auspicious,' chirruped the old lady. 'A second son at least!'

(Kipling, *Kim*. 85-86)

The old lady firmly believes in the priests' prophecy. Lama seems to be strange but holy man. She wishes to seek Lama's blessing. Kim manipulates himself as Lama's *chela*. While talking to Kim old lady denies the fact that she needs blessings so that her daughter can have a son but later when Lama interacts with her she requests Lama to bless her so that her daughter can have second son at least. This presents the grave issue of gender discrimination. Then boys were considered superior to girls and everyone wanted to have a son not a daughter. The biggest enemies of girl child were the old and senior ladies of the house who would torture their daughters-in-law for a baby boy.

3.5. Conclusion:

'*Kim*' is a fine piece of literature and a feast to enjoy for scholars of literature. Rudyard Kipling creates a world of his experiences and observations made during his stay in India. The researcher looks at the characters presented in the novel through author's experience and his understanding of the world. The social and political scenario presented in the novel with subtle observations. The typical contrast of aged oriental way of life and new modernism, race and religions is presented vividly. Various aspects of social life of then India have been addressed such as dominance of cast and religion, exploitation of common people by certain greedy priests and moneylenders. Readers also come to know about the holy ideologies of a Lama representing far greater oriental way of life. The political struggle to gain over each other and various games played for the same are also at the center of the novel. Overall the novel acquaints the readers to the Socio political issues of the colonized India by British Indian government.

Works Cited:

"Kim." *E Notes*, www.enotes.com/topics/kim.

"Kim." *Wikipedia, the Free Encyclopedia*, Wikimedia Foundation, Inc, 30 Apr. 2004, en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Kim. Accessed 6 Feb. 2021.

---. *Kim: High Interest Classics with Comprehension Activities*. EDCON Publishing Group, 2003.

Allen, Charles. *Kipling Sahib: India and the Making of Rudyard Kipling 1865-1900*. Hachette UK, 2015.

Green, Roger L. *Kipling: the Critical Heritage*. Routledge Kegan & Paul, 1971.

Kipling, Rudyard. *The Kipling Reader Selections from the Books of Rudyard Kipling*. tredition, 2012.

Sergeant, David. *Kipling's Art of Fiction 1884-1901*. Oxford UP, 2013.

Sullivan, Zohreh T. *Narratives of Empire: The Fictions of Rudyard Kipling*. Cambridge UP, 1993.

**CHAPTER IV --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF
JOSEPH CONRAD'S *THE SECRET AGENT* IN THE CONTEXT OF SOCIO-
POLITICAL PERSPECTIVES 79--102**

4.0. Introduction

4.1. Joseph Conrad and Modernism

4.2. A Brief Summary of, *The Secret Agent*

4.3. Political and Social Background of *The Secret Agent*

4.4. Major Socio-Political Issues in *The Secret Agent*: A Critical Analysis

4.5. Identity Crisis in *The Secret Agent*

4.6. Exploitation of Marginals in *The Secret Agent*

4.7. Social Injustice in *The Secret Agent*

4.8. Political Issues in *The Secret Agent*

4.9. Conclusion

4.10. Major Findings

Works Cited.

4.0. Introduction:

Joseph Conrad, (1857-1924) was primarily known as a writer of sea stories during his time. In the late nineteenth century, one witnesses the emergence of great novelists like Stevenson, Moore, Henry James, Rudyard Kipling and Joseph Conrad on a literary plane. Joseph Conrad's literary career grew during the Edwardian period and became prominent during the first two decades of the twentieth century. Thereafter Conrad has been acclaimed as a leading influence in the Modernist Movement. His novels reveal a masterful narrative technique. Originally named as Jozef Teodor Konrad Korzeniowski. He was born on 3rd, December, 1857, to Polish parents in the Russian dominated Ukraine. His parents, leading Polish patriots, were found guilty of conspiring against the Russians. They were exiled to the far northern province of Vologda along with their four year old son. Because of this hardship, his parents died young, leaving Conrad orphaned at the age of eleven. Apollo played an ideal father's role and inculcated in Joseph's mind social, political, cultural and patriotic as well as literary values. He was greatly worried about his native land. The social and political situations in the Poland have surely influenced Joseph Conrad because at the age of four his parents were exiled in the horrible place like Vologda. Due to the strange political experience, Conrad became a radical critic of Russian imperialism and anarchism. Conrad's political hatred is reflected in his prominent literary works like, *Under Western Eyes*, *The Secret Agent* etc. After the death of his parents, his Uncle Thaddeus Bobrowski looked after him. At the age of sixteen, Conrad left Poland, and went to France to fulfill his early ambition to go to sea. After joining a ship in Marseille, Conrad spent four unsettled years, travelling mainly to and from the West Indies. During this period, he was allegedly involved in gun running, as well as running up huge gambling debts, and became bankrupt. He narrowly escaped death when he attempted suicide by shooting himself in the chest. In 1878, Conrad joined the British Merchant Navy, where he worked for the next sixteen years. He travelled widely to Singapore, Australia, the Belgian Congo (which later on became the basis of his renowned novel, *Heart of Darkness*. Bombay and the East Indies provided rich material for his stories. He became a naturalized Briton in 1886. Finally he settled down in England in 1894, and devoted to writing. Conrad began his own literary career in 1895 with the publication of his first novel, *Almayer's Folly*. He married with Jessie George in 1896. He was in close contact with prominent writers

such as John Galsworthy, Ford Madox Ford and H. G. Wells. He wrote a book, *An Outcast of the Islands*. Conrad's best writing is generally thought to be found in *The Nigger of Narcissius* (1897), *Lord Jim* (1900), *Nostramo* (1904), *Victory* (1905), and *The Secret Agent* (1907). Conrad gained wide popularity after the publication of *Chance* in 1913. However, the quality of his later books deteriorated. Conrad's health decreased continuously and died in 1924, leaving his last novel, *Suspense*, unfinished.

The Secret Agent was first published in a book form in 1907. It is an accurate study of espionage and anarchy in Edwardian England. It is Conrad's darkest and most thrilling novel. F. R. Leavis thought it as a 'classic of the first order.'

4.1. Joseph Conrad and Modernism:

Among the groups of modern novelists, Joseph Conrad occupies a very significant place through his versatile personality and scholarly literary career. He has clearly focused on striking social and political issues of his time. He discussed such issues with his literary friends like John Galsworthy and Edward Garnett. Like other prominent writers and philosophers like an Albert Camus and Sartre, Conrad suddenly attacks upon the decreasing features of civilization with consciously handling the various themes of social, political, moral decay, spiritual, and cultural extremists, nihilists, of human society.

As a genuine artist, Conrad writes with some formal and dignified schemes in mind. He employs his own style and method of writing. In his literary career, he gets very strange experiences of the world. He seriously understood the sudden transitions in the civilization with all its socio-political, moral, ethnic and religious setups. He has constantly recorded the treatment of corruptibility, chaos, nihilism, evil in his writings. The major problems of modernism have been realistically presented in his work through the concepts of revolution, terror, war, and disaster, which are the prominent features of modernism.

Modern literature is always full of complexities. Joseph Conrad focuses on the themes like deception, selfishness, greediness, and exploitation of marginal. Conrad has developed his own concept of individual sorrow and anxiety, though not related with a theological conception. Conrad's novels necessarily record the socio-political issues. His novels also reveal the loss of morality and decay through his novels. Conrad was fully conscious about the modernization of his time in literature.

Joseph Conrad realized modern man's strange and complicated situations and

loss of morality. He has realized the kind of man who is completely broken by the exploitations and anarchy of war. He has also observed the burden of social and political problems by which man is completely disturbed and defeated. Significantly, he employs a wide literary space for such issues in his writings. Anarchism, terrorism, exploitations, identity crisis and political extremism are the major complicated problems presented in *The Secret Agent*.

4.2. A Brief Summary of *The Secret Agent*:

The Secret Agent is Conrad's most perfectly and skillfully constructed novel. His control on language and scene, as well as the ironic distance are the special features. He combines powerful moral, social and political issues in his literary works.

The novel opens with Adolf Verloc, the owner of a pornography shop. He was informer against London's revolutionary community. Mr. Vladimir was a diplomat of a foreign (Probably Russian) embassy. Mr. Vladimir demands that Verloc blows up the Greenwich Meridian Observatory so that the revolutionaries will be blamed. He wants violent British public to pressurize its politicians into cracking down on revolutionaries. Many of them are foreign exiles doing revolutionary activities in their home countries. Verloc has married his former landlady's daughter, Winnie. They lived together with Verloc. After a few weeks, Verloc obtains a bomb from the professor, a notorious anarchist. He felt disturbed over what he was required to do. Verloc has started going on long walks with Stevie. During this process, Verloc gets the idea that he will have Stevie to place the bomb because he would not be doubted. When the time comes, Stevie apparently trips and blows himself to pieces. The police find their way to Verloc because Winnie had kept Stevie's address in his coat. Verloc confesses to the police and faces the consequences. He gives his all savings to Winnie. She respects her brother. Winnie overhears Verloc's confession, becomes greatly disturbed, and later on stabs Verloc to death while he is lying on the couch. She leaves the house, intending to throw herself into the Thames. On the way, she meets Comrade Ossipon, one of Verloc's revolutionary friends and a notorious womanizer. She decides to run away with him. After accompanying Winnie back to her house, Ossipon finds Verloc dead. He develops a plan to get rid of Winnie. He suggests that they would enter the train separately and later on meet and take the ferry across the English Channel. Winnie gives Ossipon the money Verloc had given to her. After buying train tickets, he waits until Winnie gets into the train. At the last

moment, Ossipon jumps off the train, leaving Winnie to go on by herself. Later on, Winnie drowns herself in the crossing. The novel ends with Ossipon's severe suffering by getting information of what has happened.

4.3. Political and Social Background of *The Secret Agent*:

It is useful to have some further information about the main historical source of *The Secret Agent*. The Greenwich Park explosion of 14th, February, 1894 has some connectivity with this novel. Joseph Conrad's fiction always started with some element of reality—an anecdote, an historical event, an incident seen or a conversation overheard – by the time the work was finished, it usually denied any relation to actual persons, places or events. The element of *Lord Jim*, for example, the desertion of the pilgrim ship, was a widely reported event; but in the completed novel, Conrad tried to remove any details that tied it down to an identifiable place and time.

In *The Secret Agent*, Conrad was hardly free to avoid mentioning London and Greenwich as his locale; and he kept the actual details of event. On the other hand, as the Author's note says, after the initial challenge of his 'friend's offhand remark about the explosion, Conrad went ahead to develop the cluster of ideas with the utmost imaginative freedom. Conrad also explicitly denied any detailed knowledge either of the explosion itself or anarchism in general. Regarding anarchism, Conrad's letter of 7th October, 1907 to R.B. Cunningham Graham is particularly stated clearly:

...I am glad you like *The Secret Agent*. *Vous comprenez bien* that the story was written completely without malice. It had some importance for me as a new departure in *genre* and as sustained effort in ironical treatment of a melodramatic subject, - which was my technical intention..... (Watt,112)

Every word you say I treasure. It's no use, I cannot conceal my pride in your praise. It is an immense thing for me, however great the part I ascribe to the generosity of your mind and warmth of your heart. But I don't think that I have been satirizing the revolutionary world. All these people are not revolutionaries, - they are shams. And as regards the professor, I did not intend to make him a despicable. He is incorruptible at any rate. In making he says: 'Madness and despair, - give me that for a lever and I will move the world,' I wanted to give him a note of perfect sincerity. At the worst he is a megalomaniac of an extreme type. And every extremist is respectable. I am extremely flattered to have secured your commendation for my

Secretary of State and for the Revolutionary Toodles. It was very easy there (for me) to go utterly wrong.

By Jove! If I had the necessary talent I would like to go for the true anarchist, which is the millionaire. Then you would see the venom flow, but it's too big a job... (Watt., 113).

Conrad emphasises that anarchism in *The Secret Agent* is treated 'without malice'. It comes out from his anxiety not to offend Cunningham Graham's radical views. Yet there is much other evidence to show that Conrad did not think of *The Secret Agent* either as a serious study of anarchism, or even as a responsible reconstruction of the explosion itself. It is true that Conrad stated to Methuen that the story was based on the inside knowledge of a certain event in the history of active anarchism, but he also insisted that, it is purely a work of imagination'. Nearly twenty years later Conrad repeated this in a letter to Ambrose J. Barker, who had sent him a pamphlet about the Greenwich Outrage, presumably that by David Nicoll mentioned above. On 1st September, 1923 Conrad replied. Thank you very much for your letter and the pamphlet in which I was very much interested.

As a matter of fact I never knew anything of what was called, if I remember rightly, the 'Greenwich Bomb Outrage'. I was out of England when it happened, and thus I never read what was printed in the newspapers at that time. All I was aware of the mere fact – my novel being, in intention, the history of Winnie Verloc. I hope you have seen that the purpose of the book was not to attack any doctrine, or even the men holding that doctrine. My object, apart from the aim of telling a story, was to hold up the worthlessness of certain individuals and the baseness of some others. It was a matter of great interest to me to see how near actuality. I managed to come in a work of imagination. I hope you will do me the pleasure to accept the book [The Rover], I am sending you –which is also a work of pure imagination though very different in subject and treatment from *The Secret Agent*.

P.S.I. supposes you meant me to keep the pamphlet, which I would like to paste into my own copy of the novel. (Stape, 322).

If we as readers agree that *The Secret Agent* is not a novel about a particular eve, and its merits, therefore, do not depend upon the accuracy or insight with which the event is reconstructed, the opposite extreme also appears to be equally untenable. If *The Secret Agent* deals with events, characters, and ideas that had no basis in the real world or human history, readers should read it as fantasy. The novel surely

includes a different kinds of belief, and makes more serious claims on reader's minds. More information about the background of *The Secret Agent* may help, not only to test the authenticity of its interpretation of historical events, but also to suggest what distance that exists between Conrad's fictional world and actual time and *milieu* with which his novel deals.

The researcher feels that, it is difficult to establish with any exactness how far Conrad's presentation is different from the facts about the Greenwich Observatory explosion, because these facts are still not fully known. The secret police, double agents, and possibly foreign powers, were involved. Enough is known to make it possible to reveal that regarding some issues, Conrad was close to the facts. Regarding others he departed from them. There is, of course, a third category of matters on which there is insufficient proof to make judgment. Norman Sherry has rightly shown that Conrad's presentation was faithful in its general outlines to what the newspapers reported about the explosion in Greenwich Park, and how the anarchists reacted to it.

There is also some evidences to show that the criminal investigation Department was directly involved in the affair through *a secret agent* pretending to be an anarchist, who possibly inspired the Greenwich Outrage, and who almost certainly provided the explosives. Here the evidence comes from three main sources: from David Nicoll, whose two pamphlets on the matter are quoted above; from Ford Madox Ford; and from Sir Robert Anderson's memoirs." Conrad definitely had other sources beside Ford for the idea of secret. *The Secret Agent*, then, cannot be viewed as a reconstruction of the Greenwich explosion; and as regards Conrad's claim to Methuen, that it was 'based on the inside knowledge of a certain event in the history of active anarchism. Joll calls *The Secret Agent*, "the classic description of the relations between anarchists and police." (Watt,122).

The researcher thinks that, Conrad increases the distance between fact and fiction in these two main areas. First, he creates a domestic drama. Ford seems to be responsible for making Bourdin and therefore Stevie a half-wit, and for having the Samuel or Verloc in the case murdered. Conrad may have added the suicide of Winnie, even though he was under the impression that he got it from Ford. These changes support the effect of the second and more political kind of departure from the original circumstances. Conrad added Vladimir, and omitted any attractive, or even merely English, revolutionaries. He intended to underline the irony of the picture, and

to deepen what he called the ‘criminal futility’ of the story. In short, although *The Secret Agent* is neither a historical nor a Naturalistic novel, its distance from reality is never very great. It takes an initiated, slightly fanciful, and above all very selective, view of the *milieu* and the events out of which the story arose.

Irving Howe objected that, *The Secret Agent* does not give a fair picture of the anarchist movement as a whole. Of course, Conrad did not intend to do it. Conrad had certainly been an arc-reactionary in his early days. In 1885, for instance, he wrote to a Polish friend, Spiridion Kliszczewski;

Where’s the man to stop the rush of socio-democratic ideas? The opportunity and the day have come and are gone! Believe me: gone forever: For the sun is set and the last barrier removed. England was the only barrier to the pressure of infernal doctrines born in continental back-slums... (Watt, 122)

As the years passed, however, Conrad’s political views became less frenetic and more objective. As a Pole born under Russian occupation, he remained anti-Russian. Of course in his day anarchism was largely a Russian movement. By 1905, as his important political essay *Autocracy and War* shows, Conrad had come to see Russian despotism and Prussian militarism as the main dangers to the European order. At that time, at least, the threat of revolution seemed much less so-and with good reason. After the break between Marx and Bakunin, and the break-up of the First International in 1876, the revolutionary movement breaks into many factions. In the following decades anarchism was taken to mean terrorism; and all Europe was threatened. There were numerous attempts on the lives of leading statesmen and royalty throughout Europe, and somewhere successful. Thus, the assassinations of the Presidents of France and the United States, of the Prime Minister of Spain, of the Empress of Austria, of the King of Italy, were all attributed to anarchists.

The most striking factor in this situation to Conrad was a comprehensively wide spectrum of persons and motives which composed the anarchist movement and its sympathizers. In every country they ranged from high-minded sympathizers who were mainly concerned with the degrading injustices of the current social order, to the most marginal criminals and psychotics who sought economic or the emotional satisfaction in casual destruction. Even within the official anarchist movement itself there was a similar spectrum, from intellectual noblemen like Kropotkin to ruthless fanatics like Johann Most.

Conrad was in France when the terrorist campaign was active, early in 1894. There Valliant, who had thrown a bomb into the chamber of Deputies, was condemned to the guillotine despite the fact that no one had been killed. President Sadi Carnot refused clemency, and as he died Valliant exclaimed: Long live Anarchy! My death will be avenged. It was indeed, for on 24 June 1894 an Italian anarchist, Caserio, stabbed Carnot to death. In the ensuing prosecutions the wide following of the anarchists received great publicity.

Anarchism had a similarly broad spectrum of supporters and sympathizers in England, from eminent intellectuals to the most inefficient persons. William Morris and Bernard Shaw were active supporters in the early 1890s; but it was difficult then to see what would come out of all the quarrelsome meetings and violent speeches. In some countries, as in Spain, anarchism was to become a viable tradition. In other, Countries like England, France, and Russia, it was but one of many forces of protest which led to the creation and eventual victory of powerful socialist or communist parties.

Conrad in *The Secret Agent* at least, appears blind to this historical perspective. One reason is probably that the political views and connections of his own immediate circle seemed to illustrate something that was both typical of the anarchist movement and very near to his own central concerns as a writer. The most aristocratic of his friends, Robert Cunningham Graham, descended from the royal house of Scotland, and an MP, had spent six weeks in jail for 'assault of the police' when the authorities broke up a Trafalgar Square meeting of the Social Democratic Federation in 1887, which Kropotkin had also attended. Edward Garnett, a socialist, had a similarly varied set of connections: his father was an establishment figure, Principal Librarian of the British Museum; while his wife Constance, was friendly not only with Kropotkin but also with Stepniak, on whose behalf she went on secret business to Russia not knowing that Stepniak had earlier been a terrorist there and stabbed General Mezentzev. (Garnett, 10-14)

When Conrad began to think about the tale which was to become *The Secret Agent*, he had already had close personal experience of the interpretation of order and anarchy in the political and social order. The general conflict with individual isolation, where Conrad has chosen themes are combined to provide an ironic perspective very different from the one in which secret agents were usually viewed. For all readers one way or another like Verloc, a little less conscious, but still secret

agent is destroyed between protecting and destroying the established order. Society seems unaware of the problems; but society is really one vast conspiracy of blindness. Conrad had very skillfully used an ironic perspective.

Like the anarchists, Conrad, himself was a refugee from political oppression and, deeply grateful to England. However, his clear notion of decorum made him decline to any direct political criticism of his adopted country. There are no English anarchists in *The Secret Agent*, and the anarchists theme is hardly allowed to have any serious domestic implication. It may perhaps be regarded as in part an ironic tribute to his new country and his friends. Unlike Conrad, neither his fictional English characters, nor his actual friends seem able to imagine that there could be any serious threat to the continuance of their national life. They treated politics as a game where, in the words of Sir Robert Anderson, 'the rules of prize ring are held to apply to the struggle between the law and those who break it. (Anderson,127) In his heart, Conrad believed that trusting in such rules was just another example of Winnie Verloc's distaste for looking into things too deeply; but being reserved, he only said it in the most indirect and jesting way. He has very carefully and cautiously presented this theme in *The Secret Agent*.

The Secret Agent is considered as one of the Conrad's illustrated masterpiece. It is the first modern work of fiction about the espionage world. It is set almost entirely in the city of London. *The Secret Agent* is a simple tale. It is a complex and deeply ironic investigation of the ways in which the family ties and political ideologies corrupt each other. Evil in every possible form is obviously noticed in both domestic as well as political world. In the author's note, in 1920, Conrad explained his main purpose of the work. The notion of the work came to his mind through a comment made by his friend, Ford Maddox about an account of bomb explosion on Greenwich observatory on 15th Feb, 1894. In this explosion, an anarchist named Martial Boardin had blown himself to pieces. His sister committed suicide afterwards; Conrad used this information in writing this novel. The story of 'Verloc' was extended in a long story and finally into a novel, which was published in a serial form. It is important to note that the novel of Conrad's last phase deals with clash between the spiritual anguish of the protagonist in the wake of wide spread corruption and moral declination. He seems to attack on the evil elements in the man. His major concern lies in the criminal futility of the things.

Through *The Secret Agent*, Conrad ironically presents the wretched conditions of modern man, who is morally and spiritually corrupt, selfish and merciless. He reveals a futile and absurd picture of excessively urbanized London, its disintegration, cruelties, and terrorism. The corrupt police and political absurdness presented in the novel seems to be, exclusively Edwardian because it is thematically preoccupied with the contemporary issues like moral degeneration as well as the evils of political bureaucratic anarchism. It is most through going comic examination of the consequences of bureaucratization of human relationship in the nineteenth century Europe. “The novel presents anarchism as a necessary kind of bureaucratic dream, the European political orders inverted mirror image of itself has principle of disorder that not unexpectedly justifies the perpetuation and extension of policing power. The central irony of course being that the need for ordering power must be surreptitiously generated by a carefully policed spectacle of disorder.” (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 26-27)

Verloc is the protagonist of *The Secret Agent*. Who passes through the groups of revolutionaries and political anarchists. Through his involvement in crime, Conrad presents the negative vision of human existence, absurdness and the ideas of evil and corruption. It is a gruesome comedy. It would be possible to present it as the very darkest of Conrad’s book. It is an account of modern life and modern man untouched by grace in any form except that of British legality. It is a vision of atrocious town a book about mankind’s petty weakness and infirmity of spirit. In this novel, Conrad examines evil and darkness in the speedily degenerating morally degraded and fallen civilization in the wake of conservatism social alienation and poverty. In *The Secret Agent*, the presence of evil seems to be everywhere. It can be traced in domestic as well as political fields of London. It is an existensive and exhaustive study of the domestic life of bourgeois Verloc family. From Conrad’s point of view, London’s working classes are shadowy creatures of dark town. In this novel, Conrad implies through melodrama and violence a society in decay and through irony a criticism of the morality of his time. He brings out a world in which irrationality and violence lie at the bottom of civilized life.

The novel presents the holistic body of corrupt man and vulnerable to political commitments. It depicts the grim and gruesome state of the socio-political and domestic life of man. The worlds depicted in *The Secret Agent* are basically fallen and degraded because of chaos, spying, intrigues and machinations drawn to disrupt the

values of individual and civilization. The moral decay of government and the police could explicitly be seen through their unhealthy interactions and corruptions. It is an account of what Conrad believes the discomfiting miseries and passionate belief of a mankind always so tragically eager for self-destruction.

Through his moral and serious concern and the bounties of literary genius and wit, Conrad records the evils of “the crawling reptiles of anarchists. (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 55) The major preoccupation of the work seems to be concerned with the confusing modes of human and urban corruption. The imagery of delusion and darkness is employed to reveal the spell of corruption. Daleskf observes, in *The Secret Agent*. “It is apparent the unclear darkness is imagined as a corrupting force and the prevalence of this line of imagery reveals Conrad’s preoccupation in the novel with the urban corruption. (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 181)

Conrad’s ironical treatment of the whole evil world is presented through his letter written to R.B Cunningham Graham, where he pinpoints that the novel had some importance for him as a new departure in genre and as a continuous efforts in ironical treatment of melodramatic subject. By his ironical scheme he examines the possible domestic complexities and sense of individualistic immorality lying in the lower middle class families like the Verloc in the present society. Therefore the writing of the novel prepares to fictional irony and skepticism in the way that, Yeats, Eliot’s and Joyce is. All of them consider that it is the artistic voice alone which can impose some order on the vulgar foolishness of the present world.

4.4. Major Socio-Political Issues in *The Secret Agent*: A Critical Analysis:

This chapter is an analysis and interpretations of the socio-political issues presented in *The Secret Agent*. This illustrated novel which deals with the story of a government agent who disguises as a revolutionist in order to betray the revolutionary group of which he pretends to be a member. *The Secret Agent* is a best spy novel. It deals with bomb-scarred novel of revolution. In this novel, Conrad was conservative with little sympathy for extremist movement. But to consider this novel from such point of view will be misleading, because Conrad himself was the first to notice his readers against political interpretation of the novel. In *The Secret Agent* Conrad’s main emphasis is on the relations within lower- class family in modern society. It brings out the possibilities of emotions in such a representative family. It also presents a world of developed nation. The most important thing in the background is a famous

city of London and in the foreground is the sorrowful life of Mr. Verloc's family. Mr. Verloc is the owner of a small shop, and so was the house. He was working as a secret agent and forwarding information to a Foreign Embassy. He was also working as an informer for the British Police and a member of an anarchist organization. According to Winnie's mother's opinion, "Mr. Verloc was very nice gentleman." (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 16)

Mr. Verloc goes out in the morning. He leaves his shop nominally in charge of his brother-in-law. It could be done, because there was a very little business at any time, and practically none at all before the evening. Mr. Verloc was careful about his apparent business. Moreover, his wife was in charge of his brother-in-law. The Shop was a square box of a place, with the front glazed in small panes. During the day time, the door remained closed; in the evening it used to remain slightly open. *The Secret Agent* is a Conrad's illustrated novel, about a modern European city of London, where one appears to have a definite identity of his own. Even the individuals struggle for their security and survival and are lost in the process. In a complete novel, all people treat each other as means to an end, and commodity of manipulation rather than as human entities. Conrad's ironic treatment extends not only to few characters but also to covers all people and institutions. In *The Secret Agent*, Conrad has presented ironically three folded capacity of Mr. Verloc, such as a Shopkeeper, the head of family and a secret agent. He was living in Belgrave house of Winnie's mother, the widow of public housekeeper. It is said,

Winnie Verloc was a young woman
with full of bust, in a tight bodice,
and, with broad hips. Her hair was very tidy.
steady – eyed like her Husband, she preserved an
air of unfathomable indifference
behind the rampart of the counter. (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 14)

Winnie is of a kind and sympathetic nature wife. Her brother Stevie was a good and straight forwarding fellow. He was a mentally disabled boy. He was delicate and, in a frail way, good looking boy, except for the vacant bend of his lower lip. He had learned to read and write. But as errand – boy he did not turn out a great success. Winnie's mother was,

a stout, wheezy, woman, with a large brown face. She wore a black wig under a white cap. Her swollen legs rendered her inactive. She

considered herself to be of French decent, which might have been true; and, after a good many years of married life with licensed victualler of the more common sort, she provided for the years of widowhood by letting furnished apartments for gentlemen near Vaux hall Bridge Road in a square once of some splendor and still included in the district of Belgravia. (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 15)

In short, Mr. Verloc and his family lived a happy life. Mr. Verloc could never offer to take Winnie to theatres. In fact, as a gentleman, he was expected to do that. He was always busy during the evening. His work was in a way political, he told Winnie accordingly. He warned her to be very nice to his political friends. And with her straight, unfathomable glance she answered that she would be so, of course. It indicated that his family lived happily and peacefully.

At the beginning of the novel, *The Secret Agent*, the story appears to be social, political of a lower class family without high expectations from life except a reasonable and safe life. The setting of the novel is home, which is essential for every human being. Conrad justified his concern that, the loss of values like love and sympathy as embodied in the person of Mr. Verloc. In the novel, *The Secret Agent* Social and Political Issues are more powerful. So, Conrad's all novels basically deal with human efforts at fraternity and solidarity. He firmly believed that human values play vital role in establishing fraternity and solidarity in human society. In this connection, Jeremy Hawthorn rightly observes:

The world of *The Secret Agent* is a world of 'private individual' who have the appearance of self-sufficiency and independence, but who are related to one another in all sorts, of concealed but crucial ways. It is this privacy that, in part at last, explains the insistent reversal of animate and inanimate qualities in the novel. (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 181)

4.5. Identity Crisis in *The Secret Agent*:

The story in the novel, *The Secret Agent* deals with an identity crisis and military affair. Mr. Verloc is the protagonist. He started his connection with revolutionary people of Embassy. Mr. Vladimir is an antagonist of the story and he is the true agent. When Mr. Verloc meets privy Councillor Wrumt, Chancery's Ambassador and Mr. Vladimir blamed Mr. Verloc. "It is said, You wouldn't deceive an

idiot. They all are that by- the by, but you seem to me simply impossible. So, you began your connection with us by stealing the French gun designs. And you got yourself. That must have been very smart.” (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 26-27) But Mr. Verloc replies very politely. The Secretary complains about Verloc’s laziness and unsatisfied reports. He observes his past reports and makes conclusion that he has not done anything remarkable to earn his money for the last three years. He said, “There is a proverb in the country which says, prevention is better than cure.” (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 30) In the pause, Mr. Vladimir formulates in his mind a series of suggesting of less values remarks concerning Mr. Verloc’s face and figure. He argues that the business of the agent is to provoke not to write and speak. They have no their personal life, however, good it may be what they need is facts. Mr. Vladimir said, “The fellow was unexpectedly vulgar, heavy, and impudently unintelligent. He looked uncommonly like a master plumber come to present his bill.” (Conrad, *The Secret Agent* ,.31). However, the first Secretary of Ambassador assigns a work to Mr. Verloc. He is self- centered seeking safety and security. He is a typical hero of the story. He is lazy and greedy. Mr. Vladimir doesn’t believe in any social system. He doesn’t like an idea of human bond through marriage and family, because it is worthless for anarchists. “Forming of an attachment is doing away with your usefulness.” (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 24), says Mr. Vladimir. He argues, “I suppose it’s merely manners of speaking anarchists don’t marry.” (Conrad, *The Secret Agents*, 27) According to him, royalty and religion are no more respectable and church should be left alone. So, there is not any scope or value to humanity. Therefore, throughout the novel Mr. Verloc tries to find out his identity. So, *The Secret Agent* is a tragic story about identity crisis, suffering, problems and crisis.

4.6. Exploitation of Marginals in *The Secret Agent*:

There are two different types of worlds described in the story of *The Secret Agent*. One is the world of Verloc, a domestic. It is closely combined together by their relationships with Winnie - Verloc at the center. We find the other world of revolution, which is an anarchy represented by Mr. Vladimir. The first world consists of domestic expectations, values and emotions in family relationship. So, there is strong love between Mr. Verloc and Mrs. Verloc. The following dialogue between Mr. Verloc and Winnie is depicted effectively: Mrs. Verloc expressed her surprise at seeing him up yet:

I don't feel very well,' he muttered, passing, his hands over his moist brow.

Giddiness?'

Yes. Not at all well.'

'You, II catch cold standing here,'

She observed.

Mr. Verloc made an effort,

Finished undressing and got in to bed. Mr. Verloc, on her back and starrng at the ceiling, made a remark, "Taking very small today; 'did you turn off the gas downstairs? Yes, I did.'" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 55) Here, Conrad describes the mutual bond between Winnie and Mr. Verloc. He also describes a typical family set-up in the modern society. There is central figure of Stevie in the novel, *The Secret Agent*. She has very strong sympathy towards Stevie. She gives very much importance to her brother Stevie and not her husband. Only for the sake of Stevie, she had refused her feelings for the butcher's son. She thought Verloc could provide the security and shelter to her mother and brother. Winnie's marriage with Verloc is not a kind of affection and true love but, it is only adjustment. So, Winnie does everything that Verloc is expected. In this connection Richard Curle rightly observes:

In Certain respects Winnie Verloc was simple woman. Her education was very little, she knew nothing and cared nothing about the world at large and her life was guided by emotions and principles, she took for granted and never thought of questioning.

(Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 109)

Verloc's view about their life is very strict. There is no love for each other of course, finally, Winnie repents much for the murder of her husband Verloc. Conrad explains the difficult condition of Winnie and Verloc. She feels completely alienated after the death of Stevie. Mr. Verloc loses all communication with Winnie. She is caught in a dilemma of her motherly love towards Stevie and husband's love towards Mr. Verloc. Now she is alone in the world, she has no companion in life. Her life becomes futile and meaningless. She is afraid of law and order. She begs for help pitifully, "Don't let them hang me, Tom! Take me out of the country. I'll work for you. I'll slave for you. I'll love you. I have no one in the world...who would look at me if you don't! ... I want ask you to marry me." (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 18)) When Ossipon deceives her, she kills herself. So, Winnie is the best example of the

feminine devotion changed into rationality. Finally, one can say that Winnie Verloc's life has been a best adjustment between her loyalty towards her family and attempts to fulfill her feminine instincts.

4.7. Social Injustice in *The Secret Agent*:

Conrad in *The Secret Agent* focuses that individual is the primary source of optimism and hopes against the strong emotions and madness of dehumanizing materialistic society. There are some a couple of examples of individuals of sympathy and compassion. They are, Wait in *The Nigger of Narcissus*, Razumov in the *Under Western Eyes*, Mr. Whirr in the *Typhoon* and Stevie in *The Secret Agent*. Stevie is Mrs. Verloc's brother seems the only character in the society with passionate sense of sympathy and compassion for every type of suffering. Stevie has no idea of social injustice. That is why Mr. Verloc handles him easily in the Bomb blasting of Greenwich Observatory. He is a kind natured fellow. Stevie shows true sympathy and compassion for the poor and oppressed peoples of the world. He also helps Winnie in her household duties. He works with Mr. Verloc honestly spends his empty time drawing the circles with compass, pencil and piece of paper. He also shows sympathy not only for human being but also for the animals. Even though Stevie is mentally disabled man, he shows sympathy towards the horse. It is a commentary on man's inhuman and cruel ways. Even though he has sympathy towards Cab-driver, on the other hand, he makes pessimistic comments on society. He knows it from experience. It is a bad and cruel world! "Bad world for poor people!" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 109) Here, Stevie feels affections for the poor people but he is not capable of understanding the real world. Only his sister Winnie can understand Stevie's condition. Winnie knows that Stevie is disturbed by the bad and cruel world because, he does not understand the reality. Here, Conrad focuses that Stevie is a mad man with simplicity and positive morality. But the community or society in which he lives is complicated and strange. It tries to remove the simplicity. It means, in this complicated world simple ones are not allowed to live happily. So, Conrad depicts the portrait of Stevie that does some complicated thinking on madness and criticizes the madness of the world in general.

4.8. Political Issues in *The Secret Agent*:

The Secret Agent explicitly presents the seedy underworld of London's radical

politics in which revolutionaries and anarchists work against mainstream Western civilization. Conrad is clearly critical of these radicals. He is the strong supporter of human values. Comrade Ossipon, Michaelis, Karl Yundt, Adolf Verloc, and the Professor are members of the radical camp. Their politics ranges from being double agents to revolutionaries to terrorists to anarchists. Each comes off poorly in Conrad's depiction. Mr. Verloc is lazy and conceited. He is also politically ineffective, which causes Mr. Vladimir to demand "a series of outrages" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 28) from him. Furthermore, He uses Mr. Verloc as an instrument and gets work done he wanted. Mr. Verloc works as a double agent. But his most condemning shortcoming is that he manages to get his brother-in-law blown up. Michaelis, on the other hand, spends his time writing a voluminous, incomprehensible memoir, while Karl Yundt is portrayed as a "swaggering spectre" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 45) and "a disgusting old man" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 51), who is nursed by a blear-eyed old woman, a woman he had years ago persuaded from a friend, and afterward he had tried more than once to shake off into the gutter, but he cannot throw off this "indomitable snarling old witch" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 51). In case of Ossipon, Conrad ridicules his devotion to the ideas of Cesare Lombroso, and Ossipon seems more interested in seducing women than in engaging in politics. The final blow against him comes in his stealing Winnie's money and abandoning her to death. The Professor on the other hand is in some ways portrayed as the most politically committed of the group. He is referred to as "the perfect anarchist." (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 67) and in many ways he is an anarchist. His main aim is to blow up established society and start again. Conrad criticizes his views, but more important factor is that, the Professor's views are made with his own personal disappointment. His agenda appears to be largely his way of getting back at the world.

Conrad has given a negative portrait of the political radicals in *The Secret Agent*. Readers might consider that Conrad takes a side of the established governments, but he has not that. At least, he does not side with the established governments but he suggests that they are a poor alternative to the revolutionaries and anarchists. His attitude is particularly apparent in his portrait of Mr. Vladimir, who undoubtedly is meant to represent the unnamed Russian government. Mr. Vladimir's cynicism in using Mr. Verloc to blow up the Greenwich Meridian Observatory is morally bad since he is not making a political statement but simply seeking to throw blame for the incident onto the revolutionaries. Even though the bombing is

unsuccessful, it still produces much effect for witch. Mr. Vladimir had hoped, since an outcry is raised against the revolutionaries. In addition to this, the bombing results in the deaths of Stevie, Verloc, and Winnie. Conrad intimately familiarizes the reader with the Verloc family and their situation makes their fate (which is directly linked to Mr. Vladimir's demands) particularly poignant, but this does not matter to Mr. Vladimir, who is unconcerned with the human cost and suffering of his actions.

Conrad further clearly reveals his disapproval of the established governments in his portrayal of Sir Ethelred and his secretary, Toodles, and as well as in his portrayal of the British police. Despite his important political position, Sir *Ethelred* appears to be a fool (as does Toodles). The political infighting, and the way that Chief Inspector Heat and the Assistant Commissioner attempt to defeat each other, present a coherent effort or one that is philosophically committed to the suppression of crime. Each man seeks to outdo the other and avoid being shown up. Worse, though, is the way they handle Verloc's murder, which appears to have been covered up at the end of the novel. The police seem to make no investigation into its cause or criminal. Moreover, they use Verloc in the same way as Mr. Vladimir does. Verloc provides them with information in exchange for their looking the other way towards his questionable activities. In fact, in some ways, the government authorities and the political radicals seem more similar than different. Both groups deliberately avoid legal barriers to achieve what they want. In the end, the use of Verloc by Mr. Vladimir and the British police differs little from Verloc's use of Stevie. Each casts aside consideration of individuals in pursuing use of Stevie. Each casts aside considerations of individuals in pursuing political ends.

The Secret Agent is Conrad's second political novel. Unlike *Nostromo*, which was set in developing Latin America, *The Secret Agent* is set in the very heart of Western civilization. The importance of the setting in *The Secret Agent* cannot be overemphasized. The events of the novel occur where they do. Conrad allows commenting on both revolutionary activities as well as on Western civilization itself. As it was true of the setting at the opening of *Heart of Darkness*, at the time in which *The Secret Agent* is set, England was the most powerful nation on earth, both economically and politically. It was also the largest nation in the world, if we include all of its colonized countries. London was the centre of England's political, economic, and cultural progress. The fact that anarchy and chaos exist in this location is deeply ironic. Conrad often purposefully takes European characters and places them outside a

Western setting in order to see how they will respond. Typically, once outside civilization, they become wholly uncivilized. Conrad reveals the inherent disorder of the world and thereby reveals the order of Western civilization to be merely an open space imposed on a non-Western setting. In *The Secret Agent*, however, Conrad reveals anarchy and chaos in the very heart of Western civilization. By setting the novel in London, Conrad reveals that even the seeming order of civilization in the West is illusory, because the political radicals and political conservatives work counter to social order.

As he has done in his other political novels, Conrad also skillfully balances political issues against human issues. In *The Secret Agent*, radical political intermingle with the Verloc family's attempts to exist in a world in which, as Winnie concludes, "things do not stand much looking into" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 136). During the course of the novel, Conrad records Winnie's life from the time she was a young girl until the time the novel is set and reveals that throughout her life she has had to make compromises. As a young girl, she protects Stevie from her father's violence, placing herself in harmful way by doing so. As a young woman, she falls in love with the butcher's son but is forced to give him up because of her responsibilities to her brother and physically weak mother. At the end, she marries Verloc not because that she loves him but because he represents financial security and because he is willing to let Winnie's mother and brother live with them. Here is more of a business transaction than a romance; she provides the services of husband for herself and her family. Winnie makes this choice because society gives her with no viable alternatives. Similarly, Winnie's mother applies for charity retirement housing thinking that Verloc will be less burdened with only Stevie and Winnie to support. Again, a social circumstance dictates her self-sacrifice. In the pitiful situation of Winnie and her mother, the researcher sees Conrad's commentary on the desperate circumstances of women, particularly working-class and middle-class women.

Along with the pitiful situation of women, Conrad's balancing the political and human plot lines serves to link these factors in such way that they become inseparable and share not only the same participants but also the same plot lines. In other words, by using these two intertwining plot lines, Conrad forces the reader to compare and contrast them. The result is the human loss of the political activism. The senseless attempt on the Greenwich Observatory brings about the deaths of the three members of Verloc family. Despite the irony of Conrad's narrative voice, despite

Verloc's incompetent machinations, despite Winnie's and Stevie's Obscurity in British society, the reader feels sympathy with human tragedy that results from the politics. Conrad makes a good choice when he includes Stevie among his characters. In the end, Conrad reveals that an individual like Stevie, whom many would have seen to be a very small contributor to society, is worthy of value and sympathy. Verloc never recognizes this fact. Verloc was "under the mistaken impression that the value of individuals consists in what they are in themselves, he could not possibly keep the original as it is the value of Stevie in the eyes of Mrs. Verloc" (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 177). It is Winnie's realization that Verloc could see no value in Stevie, as much as Verloc's actual role in Stevie's death that causes her to murder him. In Conrad's all novels, the human element becomes much more significant than the idea or the object. The ideas of the political radicals and political conservatives fall by the wayside, but the value of human existence and the struggle for human survival gets priority in *The Secret Agent*.

Joseph Conrad's *The Secret Agent* (1907) works differently from the spy stories of Buchan and his contemporaries. It reveals what could happen to England if anarchists were allowed into the country. Anarchism is not the basic theme of the novel, but it provides the platform of the novel. It is skillfully used to show the potential dangers foreign agents could pose to England. The Greenwich bomb violence of 1894 provided the clue of Conrad's *The Secret Agent*. The novel is not a complete reconstruction of the Green which explosion of course, there is a similarity between the Greenwich explosion and incidents presented in it. It is generally accepted that the embassy to which Verloc visits is Russian. However, the names of the embassy persons suggest that it could belong to any one of several European nations which were at odds with England during that period. Mr. Vladimir's name and his "guttural central Asian tones" indicate that he is a Russian. But state counselor Wurmut and the previous ambassador Baron Scott-wartenheim have German names. Wurmut, having first being called "State Counselor" is referred to later as Chancellor d' Ambassade" Verloc himself is French-English and is given the German name Adolf. Mr. Vladimir's embassy could therefore be Russian, German or French – countries about which England was suspicious of at the turn of the century when *The Secret Agent* was written. By making the embassy a systematic one, Conrad wants the reader to imagine the importance of the potential threat these European Countries, singly or combined, could pose to the security of England. The background to the

novel is the same as that of Childers and Buchan. England, still at odds with its continental neighbors', was never sure which one of them would seek to undermine its society.

The main threat in *The Secret Agent* is not forwarded by an invading army but by European anarchists who had taken shelter in England from punishment on the European mainland. The anarchists believed that revolution could be brought about only by illegal means. Anarchism and terrorism became synonymous and all of Europe was filled with greater fear. Numerous attempts and most of them successful, were made on the lives of prominent statesmen and royalty throughout Europe. The assassinations of heads of state of several European countries were attributed to anarchists. Verloc reminds Vladimir of the warning he gave when the Grand Duke Ronald visited Paris. When European Governments began to put pursue on them, many anarchists fled to England for shelter. Conrad was also a refugee from political oppression and was deeply grateful to his adopted country. As a pole born under Russian occupation, Conrad remained anti-Russian throughout his life. In his days, anarchism was largely a Russian movement and Conrad came to regard Russian despotism and Prussian militarism as the dangers to the European order. The absence of English anarchists and the fact that he did not make anarchism central to domestic politics may be regarded as Conrad's tribute to his new country and friends.

The anarchists in the novel serve the function of promoting an enquiry into the usual climate of English public life. The political moderation of Britain serves to naturalize revolutionary activity. Its antithesis is not anarchism but extremism. These exactly contrasting extremists are portrayed in *The Secret Agent* – the Russian agent Vladimir and American terrorist called the "Professor." Both hate English economy, because they know that it is fatal to the fanaticism on which political violence generally feeds. So they collaborate in the Greenwich explosion. Vladimir provides the motive and the Professor the bomb. Moreover, both dismiss the ideology of moderation as dangerous to their work. The purpose that brings them together is the attempt to provoke the British establishment into what Vladimir calls, "universal repressive legislation" so that the anarchists can gain public sympathy by working against the government.

Despite this, the conservatism revealed in the novel remains more social than political. The hostility of the two extremists is not restricted to English political moderation. They are at odds with something more fundamental – with the idea of

social life. They are themselves socially dislocated outsiders. Vladimir has never been a member of “civilized society and the urbanity he displays is only a performance. The professor has “dropped out” of society and yet hopes to achieve worldly success without working for it. His inevitable failure persuades him that English cultural institutions are unjust and turns him against the social order. Both men, especially the Professor, declare war against the idea of organized life.

Another function of anarchists is to establish the meaning of conservatism and to reveal, especially through the Professor, that such conservatism is necessary for the mutual stability of the individual and society. The novel undoubtedly serves two purposes – to show the extent to which moderation should be practiced and the need for social conservatism. Conrad’s *The Secret Agent* was the first to treat spying and international conspiracy realistically. However, its influence on espionage fiction was not as great as that of Somerset Maugham’s *Ashenden : or The British Agent* (1928).

4.9. Conclusion:

The prominent features of Joseph Conrad’s *The Secret Agent* like exploitations of marginal, political extremism, social injustice, anarchism and terrorism, betrayals, and identity crisis have been carefully analyzed and extensively explained in this chapter. The analysis and explanations of the above-mentioned features are helpful to understand Conrad’s life, his illustrated works, identity crisis, orphanage lives. His life itself represents an identity crisis. He had an experience of an orphanage life. He was born in Poland and died in England. His long journey shows a wide experience of human nature and human social situations. The chapter is also an evidence for the detailed exploration of the Socio- Political Issues presented in the novel, *The Secret Agent* (1907). The present study assumes that identity can be created because it is not fixed, but it changes through social patterns and it also changes as per the changing conditions and needs.

4.10. Major Findings:

1. Social and Political issues undergo changes as per the changing social environment.
2. Identity formation of any person and society is not static, it also undergoes changes.
3. Joseph Conrad successfully mirrors the Socio-Political issues in the novel, *The Secret Agent* (1907).

Works Cited:

- Anderson, *Sidelights on the Home Rule Movement*, P.127.
- Anderson, Sir R. *Sidelights on the Home Rule Movement*. 1907.
- Bivona, Daniel. 'Conrad's Bureaucrats: Agency, Bureaucracy and the Problem of Intention', *NOVEL –A Forum of Fiction*, Vol.26, No.2 (Winter, 1993), P.164.
- Conrad, J: *The Secret Agent*, London, Penguin Popular Classics, 1994.
- Conrad, Joseph, and J. H. Stape. *Notes on Life and Letters*. Cambridge UP, 2004.
- Daleski, H.M. Joseph Conrad: *The Way of Dispossession* (1977), P.155.
- David Garnett, *The Golden Echo*, (London), 1954, P. 10-14.
- Garnet, Edward. 'Unsigned Review' *Nation* (Sept.28, 1907) Reprinted in *Conrad: The Critical Heritage*,) 1973) (Sherry Norman ed.), P.194.
- Garnett, David. *The Golden Echo: The golden echo*. 1953.
- https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Secret_Agent
- Jean- Aubry, *Life and Letters, II*, 322.
- Jean- Aubry, *Life and Letters, II*, 60. And Elbridge L. Adams, Joseph Conrad: *The Man New York*, 1925, P.55
- Jeremy, Hawthorne. Joseph Conrad: *Language and Self Consciousness*, London: Edward Arnold Publisher, 1979, Print.P.77.
- Watt, Ian. *Essays on Conrad*. Cambridge UP, 2000.

**CHAPTER V --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF
GRAHAM GREENE'S *THE CONFIDENTIAL AGENT* IN THE CONTEXT OF
SOCIO- POLITICAL PERSPECTIVES 103--135**

5.0. Introduction

5.1. Graham Greene as a Political Novelist

5.2. Greene's Novels and Entertainments

5.3. Greene as a Proponent of a New Trend in Literature

5.4. Element of Humanism in Greene's Fiction

5.5. Analysis and Interpretations of Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* in Brief

5.6. Analysis and Interpretations of Socio- Political Issues in Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent*

5.7. Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* as a Thriller

5.8. Consequences of War Presented in Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent*

5.9. Element of Humanism in *The Confidential Agent*

5.10. Examples of Ironic situations in *The Confidential Agent*

5.11. Conclusion

Works Cited.

5.0. Introduction –

Graham Greene's expression regarding writing is quite vibrant. He writes:

Writing is a form of therapy: sometimes I wonder how all those who do not write, compose or paint can manage to escape the madness, the melancholia, the panic fear which is inherent in the human situation.” (Greene, *Preface of Ways of Escapes*)

5.1. Graham Greene as a Political Novelist:

Some critics consider Greene as a political novelist. They give more importance to his consistent presentation of the political situations existing in the twentieth century. They explain this view by giving examples of his illustrated novels located in war torn areas of the world. For examples: *The Confidential Agent* (1939), *The Quite American* (1955) and the countries ruined by dictatorship and political tension, for instance – Haiti in *The Comedians* (1966) Paraguay in *The Honorary Consul* (1973). It is true that he always selects as background countries crushed under war or dictatorship, but this choice does not mean that he desires to achieve any political benefit. In fact, such places provide him with a background to describe suffering which is an integral part of human life. Of course, he is interested in political events and places where such events take place. He has very intelligently used political events and places as a source of his renowned novels.

Commenting on the political nature of his novels, Greene says:

Certain books have clearly enough exercised a considerable political influence, but mine don't belong to this category\--- I don't want to use literature for political ends--- Even if my novels happen incidentally to be political books, they are not written to provoke changes--- (Greene and Allain,78)

His *The Honorary Consul* is based on the notion that in a world dominated by political 'isms' and institution and devoid of faith, some kind of faith or commitment is called for and cannot be evaded. *The Quite American* is Greene's reaction against the slippery side in to sentimental pity of *The Heart of Matter*. Haiti in *The Comedians* is shabby land, “a country of fear and frustration”, where “violent deaths are natural deaths.” Greene's picture of Haiti is just a microcosm of the chaotic conditions in the world at large. His travels in Mexico in 1938 and his shock at the religious, social and political persecution he witnessed these provided the material for

The Lawless Roads (1939) and *The Power and the Glory* (1939). The latter novel was a great critical success, winning the Hawthorn Den award, while earning the fury of the Vatican. Catholic bishops and cardinals who read the book thought it concentrated too much of its attention on the wretchedness of human beings and painted too negative a picture of the priesthood. Throughout his life, Graham Greene often visited places of social and political conflict, including Vietnam, Kenya, Poland, Cuba and Haiti, and used them intelligently as material for his novels.

5.2. Greene's Novels and Entertainments:

Greene's knack of fictionalizing real life situations in different areas of the world has been the source of his strength as a novelist. His novels are united by the theme of commitment- political, social, moral or emotional in the face of oppressive realities. These novels like his religious novels probe into the problems of good and evil, the strange misery in man's life and the complexities of the human action. Greene insists on the seeming pairs like love and hate, good and evil and beauty and suffering. Some critics dismiss Greene as a spy thriller writer. His novels are suitable stuff for cinema and television action films. The permanent value of Greene's art lies in his ability to bend the form of the thriller with that of allegory. The ordinary pursuit and clash of the spy story is projected into the higher plane of psychological and ethical assertions that produce an unending conflict between the human desires and the social, political and religious norms. The ordinary pursuit story contains some kind of seriousness. Greene himself has made a difference between his serious books and the spy thrillers by calling the former "novels" and the later "entertainments." Most of Greene's entertainments are thrillers with all their tools of crimes and intrigues, espionage and secret documents, pursuit and escape, murder and suicide.

Greene's entertainments have the benefit of intellectual glamour, psychological interest and the climate of social, political and moral questionings. His all entertainments reveal his obsessive consciousness of crime and violence, love and hate, beauty and suffering in the contemporary world. This consciousness is not peculiar to Greene; it is an integral part of modern sensibility. His first entertainment, *Stamboul Train* creates a world of exiles, a world in which lust rather than love, betrayal rather than fidelity, evil rather than good are more likely to recur. His *A Gun for Sale* (1936), *The Confidential Agent* (1939), and *The Ministry of Fear* (1943) clearly illustrate the distinction between his novels and entertainments. His heroes in

ntertainments clearly deny belief in God. *A Gun for Sale* is packed with the warnings and threatening of war. It opens with the murder of the pacifist minister of war of a European state. In this novel, Greene fully develops the image of the hunted man. The hunted man is James Raven, but he is also the hunter. *The Confidential Agent* has its central character – D., a lonely and hunted man. He is quite aware of guilt and involved in treachery and violence. The World in *The Confidential Agent* is as gloomy as that of *A Gun for Sale*. In *The Ministry of Fear* has an actual war. *The Third Man* is the first of Greene's post war entertainment. It also brings up Greene's preoccupation with evil, dangerous and criminal impulses in man.

5.3. Greene as a Proponent of a New Trend in Literature:

Sean O' Faolain in his illustrated book, *The Vanishing Hero* treats Greene as a proponent of a new trend in Literature, a trend which moves in the direction of existentialist thinking. Sean O' Faolain compares Greene with Albert Camus and with reference to the theme of the 'hunted' man. He presents that Greene's heroes are in search of themselves much in the same way as Camu's heroes are. Greene's novels develop a theme which deals with the religious, social, and political problems of human life that are clearly existentialist in nature. The existentialist themes presented in the works of Dostoevsky, Kierkgaard, Nietche and Sartre are also found in Greene's fiction. Sartre holds that man is not ready-made, he has to live in the world and make himself and choose the conditions under which he wants to live. Choice is unavoidable. It is the ultimatum life force on the individual when he finds himself at a critical turning point. Sartre states that not to choose is also a choice. There is no escape of man from choice. Greene's characters also find themselves the ultimatum life force situations. In his *The Heart of Matter*, Scobie's choice is to leave his wife Louise and live with his mistress, Helen or he can abandon his mistress and live with his wife. Finally, he can leave both and commit suicide. The last alternative is the one he finally decides upon. All these situations make Greene's man conscious of his own freedom and finitude.

5.4. Element of Humanism in Greene's Fiction:

Greene's fiction reflects his humanism, his feeling for and recognition of the world of man. His art is humanistic in content and universal in form. His fiction communicates his own life experiences, which are the life experiences of the

struggling, suffering humanity. He believes in the core values which are the most valuable assets in human life to acquire and cherish. He affirms the positive human values and reasserts in clear terms the need of a moral life. His novels are memorable defenses of men against machines of military life, destruction, tyranny and despair. He is quite conscious of man's weaknesses. He also recognizes the moral strength of man. He believes in the dignity of man. He is committed to the defenses of humanity. He is an author for whom writing has been an act of faith and assertion.

Greene is a man given over to an obsession. His obsession is human being and his suffering. His basic obsession is the predicament of man in an evil world. The obsession is the product of his moral development, his continuous battle with the reality that inflects man. His humanistic vision conveys the horror of existence – “the mental degradation to which a man's intelligence is exposed on its way through life.” His dilemma reminds us of Hamlet's: “To be or not to be.” He visualizes a “terrible aboriginal calamity.” Greene is committed to humanity in the world's literature. He is committed to humanity in its fight against evil. He offers us “a tragic vision of man's predicament.”

Human values relate to the spiritual process of becoming part of one's inner drive and are universal in nature. Greene asserts that human values take human being to the domain of being beyond the worldly domains of doing and possessing. Human values enable man to rise above worldly considerations. They constitute the absolute code beyond social, cultural, political etc. limitations of time and territorial boundaries. They stand alone, self-validated in their mutability. They flow out of the highest level of self as ultimate holistic, potential aspect of our existential reality. Integrity is the mother of all core values. It manifests through honesty, purity, empathy, uprightness, love, respect etc. for others. Integrity means wholeness, entirety and the quality of being united with our individual cosmic self. Naturally, integrity is the sole vehicle of human finite self to cosmic self. Until and unless human beings are grounded in integrity, they move around the misery-go-round of materialistic life of craving, having suffering and endless new cravings.

Political leaders and people in general compromise with core values predominantly due to spiritual ignorance and materialistic vision of life. Selfishness, individual and political ego gives rise to greed, jealousy, cruelty, narrow-mindedness and all sorts of vices. Inner consciousness keeps human beings unshaken amid all mundane, allurements which end in total futility. Greene argues that human values

can assure World peace, security, safety and better future of mankind. In a worldly scenario, human values ensure acceptability, sustainability and integrity essentially needed for human relationship at all levels. Greene firmly believes in that the development of cosmic consciousness removes undue attachment with ego-bound doing and possessing and attracts welfare of mankind. Greene points out that the adherence to human values can help to remove human suffering. He recommends constructive dialogues among nations at the social, cultural, economic, commercial and political levels.

5.5. Analysis and Interpretations of Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* in Brief:

The Confidential Agent is an illustrated thriller written by Greene. It was written within six weeks in 1938 and published in 1939. Greene himself has stated that it was urgency. Being highly sensitive to the existing situation, he could do it. *The Spanish Civil War* supplied him the background for this renowned thriller, but it was the Munich Agreement which provided the urgency. It was the time during which trenches were being dug on London commons, British children were being evacuated carrying gas masks to strange homes in the country. Many of them including the writer joined a mysterious organization called the officer's emergency Reserve, which included professional men, journalists, bankers etc. Many of them were left with the uneasy sense leaving their families without support. Green himself satisfied his conscience in the army. So, he determined to write *The Confidential Agent* continuing the writing of *The Power and the Glory* simultaneously.

It was a time when nations were in turmoil. The turmoil and conflict spread on a global level. It was continuously increasing to inevitability. Such kind of situation overwhelms feelings of urgency, tear, despair and panic. Rumors cause riots, agitations and violence. In a turmoil situation, nobody is to be trusted. Conspiracies spread everywhere which caused panic and fear. It was the perfect situation for the sensitive writers to reflect the existing turbulent situation. Greene, being always sensitive to such situation could find appropriate material for his *The Confidential Agent*. He considered this thriller an entertainment, but it came out as a light relief. He could successfully manage to separate these two visions. *The Confidential Agent* has a hallucinatory quality and it reminds readers of Kafka. Greene may not have an idea what turn the plot might take. The central character of the novel, D. stumbles from

one trap into another. He is terribly thwarted at each turn. His mission of getting coal contract for his nation is seemingly almost doomed. Most of the characters in the novel experience terrible fears. Each scene proves to be risky and dangerous. While writing this novel, Graham Greene must have thought of both the Spanish Civil War and the Munich Agreement. The frightening dream pictured in Greene's mind was internationally shared. There was no remission for him, from this terrible nightmare.

Readers explicitly experience echoes of Kafka's technique in naming his characters. The agent of the title is referred to throughout the story simply as D., while his opponent is named as L. These two men are on different sides, but they understand one another. Greene has named them as D. and L., because Greene did not wish to localize their conflict. Greene had certain vague ambition in his mind to create something legendary out of contemporary thriller: the hunted man who becomes in turn the hunter, the peaceful man who turns at bay, the man who has learned to love justice by suffering injustice. The novel moves rapidly, because Greene was not struggling with his own technical problems. His intentions were to ghost the novel by an old writer who was to die a little before the studio in which he worked, was blown out of existence. However, he accepted that it is a better thriller: It is absolutely true that *The Confidential Agent* is a better thriller because it displays the contemporary social and political situations and entertain the readers.

D. is not a typical spy. Civil War and the death of his wife greatly changed him. He is not a driven man, but he feels a duty to his wife's memory. In a previous life he was an academician, an expert on the French Knight Roland, where story is interpreted as a tale of misguided idealism. But Greene seems to say that the old myths would not work in this new world. He feels free in his 'entertainments' to deal briskly with the Roland image and then discuss it. D. finds himself cheated and later on framed for murder. He is pursued and made to turn to be a hunter. He is a classic figure. He is a passive man of action. D's close model is probably Richard Hannay in John Buchan's *The Thirty Nine Steps* (1915) and other book written as war was approaching and everything seemed socially and politically threatened. Buchan writes about why alliances were made and broken, why certain men disappeared, and where the sinews of war come from? As does Graham Greene, D. may be professional but he is unlike Hannay. He is teased and taunted by his opponent L. He is actually beaten by L.'s Chauffeur. The irony of Greene's title is that his agent can have confidence neither in himself nor those around him. He is crackled and deceived and

betrayed throughout as he makes his way around England.

The novel opens on the south coast, with D.'s arrival in the country. He receives small courtesy and kindness from chambermaid called Else, but there is no rest to him from his mission. The novel contains an unhappy situation of shootings, scrapes, chases, and confrontations. It is at its strongest in its quieter moments. D. meets with potentially supporting person at a language school, where Dr. Bellows explains how 'Entrenationo' (Greene's version Esperanto) will bring about 'communication instead of misunderstanding, strife.' During the discussion between D. and Dr. Bellows, Dr. Bellows an idealist tells D., 'The first words of the Entrenationo Language must always be ones of welcome.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 45). This humanistic and constructive attempt at internationalism seems ironic set against the backdrop of conspiracy, mistrust, disloyalty and dislike. D. himself is cynical of Dr. Bellows' ability to forge links between the most unlikely countries which were interested in jealousy, conspiracy, espionage and cruelty. Whether Greene shared this cynicism is questionable. His whisky priest in *The Power and the Glory* could not renounce his faith despite full knowledge of his own failings. Similarly, D. may come to doubt his intentions in attempting to help his own side's cause in the civil war, but he cannot stop trying to complete the task set for him. This leads him from smoky London to the smokier industrial heart land to the north, where coal is about to be sold to the opposing side in the conflict.

The novel at the beginning seems curious, it takes on an almost Alice-in-Wonderland quality in the later sections. Towns are called things like Mountzion and paradise and Cowcumberill, and one character is even called crikey. A group of disrepute young activists comes to D.'s help, and he is allowed to state his case to the miners who are desperate for the new international contract. In the end, D has to run away only to find out a story of rescue from evil ways awaiting him back on the south coast, where his luckless adventure began.

The Confidential Agent is not reputed as Greene's *The Power and the Glory* is. The novel is uneven. Its sudden turns and twists of the plot are not always convincing. It is an exhausting novel to read, in the way that the computer games can be exhausting when one's hero never seems to find rest from the forces of darkness. Nevertheless, it is an intriguing novel. It is given a force by the fact that conflict - within nations as well as between them continuing to resound a topic now, as it ever was. Greene also reveals a way that the spy novel would go in the age of focusing on

the moral weakness and uncertainties of sometimes unwilling or unintentional participants. In fact, some critics observed that Greene knew nothing of real-life spying when he wrote this novel. As a practicing Catholic, he was bound to acknowledge sympathy and respect for any faith which he sincerely held. The best spies like the best terrorists, work from a sense of -absolute duty. D. is a tormented soul - dutiful to the memory of his wife and haunted by his time spent awaiting execution in prison. He has said to himself, 'his territory was death: he could love the dead and the dying better than living.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, viii) his is a shocking statement whose resounding will remain powerful in the current and prevailing climate of political terrorism, ideological zeal, and suicide bomber. Taking the social, cultural, political, materialistic etc. situations existing during the World War II into consideration the researcher feels that Greene's vision remains as clear and as relevant as ever.

5.6. Analysis and Interpretations of Socio- Political Issues in Graham Greene's

The Confidential Agent:

Human being is a social animal. He cannot live alone. It has been proved through generations together. Human beings in an ancient period were scattered. They were in the company of nature, different kinds of animals, birds, creatures etc. Some of them were harmless, whereas others proved to be harmful. They must have applied their thinking faculty to decide from whom they should be aware of and be fearless from others. Evolutionary changes from the biological point of view went on taking place from the very beginning. Human being must have applied his mind to find out and utilize various sources available around him to make his life comfortable. For example: Shelter to protect himself from the natural assaults like storm, thundering, lightning, extreme heat, extreme cold, extreme rain etc.

An idea of living in group must be an outcome to protect themselves from various kinds of dangers caused by various hostile factors. Through evolutionary changes, they must have established themselves comfortably in comparison to animals, birds and creatures. After establishing themselves comfortably, man must have thought of superiority- complex to prove himself superior than others. It is inbuilt in case of human being to tolerate certain things or to be submissive or to have withdrawing attitude in adversities. Once, some of them established themselves economically, socially, politically they aspire to rule others, to exercise power on

others. This attitude leads human being towards conflict. Another kind of conflict, unless it is appropriately and in the time controlled, it gives birth to another conflict. Conflict among individuals gives birth to a group conflict and it goes on widening accordingly.

Epics like *The Paradise Lost*, *The Ramayana*, *The Mahabharata*, *The Odyssey* have explicitly explained various kinds of conflicts amongst individuals as well as the conflicts (war) among the groups or nations. We label them as the conflicts (wars) between the positive-minded people and negative-minded people. It means, positive as well as negative elements are very much there in human personality. In other words, the conflict between 'good' and 'evil' is an age-old factor in case of mankind in human history. William Golding, a twentieth century novelist, in his illustrated novel entitled, *The Lord of the Flies* written on the background of the World War II is based on some innate evil in human nature. Through this renowned novel, Golding tries to teach and warn readers of the evil nature of mankind. He believed that the horrors of the World War II can be based on innate evil. Through this illustrated novel, William Golding presents that laws and rules are definitely necessary to keep the darker side of human nature within limitations. When all elements of civilization disappear, human beings revert to a more primitive part of their nature and they turn into savages. Anarchy replaces democracy. Society holds human beings together, and without civilization and rules human being's ideals, values, basic ideas of what is right and wrong are forgotten, and the evils of human nature emerge, and they cause negative action like war.

At the very beginning of the novel, *The Confidential Agent*, Graham Greene presents the existing situation of human society. D., the central character of the novel experiences class distinction when he gets into the English ship at Dover. The narrator tells:

The little wooden gate with a placard: 'First-Class Passengers Only.'
There had been a time when the class distinction would have read like an insult, but now the class divisions were too subdivided to mean anything at all. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 4)

His voyage in the ship is stormy because discrimination, harassment and mental disturbances. It reveals that the class distinction is necessarily observed everywhere and at all time. In- depth study of Graham Greene's *England Made Me* (1935), *The Confidential Agent* (1939) and *The Ministry of Fears* (1943) makes us

understand that bombs were falling on London. It was in flames. Graham Greene had seen it at first hand, as an air-raid warden in Bloomsbury area. After the devastations of the First World War, striking changes took place in England. These changes include social, cultural, psychological, political, loss of confidence, the slow decline of belief in ideas, increasing domination of the elite group, questioning of an education and moral system, loss of innocence etc. These changes became social, political and existential realities. During that period, Greene was hailed as a Catholic novelist. George Woodcock in his renowned book entitled, *The Writer and Politics* comments on the social and political aspects of Greene's work. He writes:

Greene's novels form---- one of the most comprehensive surveys of modern social violence that has yet been in European fiction. They show clearly the nature of the class struggle in modern society, and also go beyond the Marxist to a realization of that even more fundamental struggle, in progress, throughout the world today, between the individual and the collective, the common man and the State." (Woodcock G., 143)

The idea of internationalism as a social, political and economic concept necessarily underlines Woodcock's comments. All these changes helped the Fascist cause as well as an economic empire which slowly became unscrupulous. Consequently, it gave birth to conspiracies, deceptions, distrust and betrayal. Woodcock further observes that Graham Greene recreated the journey to extend and sharpen the references of threat and reality. His novels explicitly bring out a changing world order that cuts across national frontiers to reveal a world of international secret agreement in war, finance and business. Greene's later novels explore the polarization of power and hegemonic confrontation that has become the reality of modern life.

During the Second World War, the city of London was threatened and later on devastated by war. *The Confidential Agent* rightly illustrates the contrast between the bliss of prewar social, cultural, political situations and the distastes of the present. D. a Spanish Republican agent and the central character of this novel, a middle aged and middle class professor of Romance literature with romantic and passionate attitudes becomes revolutionary. He tries his level best to get the coal contract for his nation. He is a man who believes and honors human values but his idealism acquires overtones of irony, cynicism and despair. In his introduction to *The Confidential Agent*, Greene writes:

I had vague ambition to create something legendary out of a contemporary thriller: the hunted man who becomes in turn a hunter, the peaceful man who turns at bay, the man who has learnt to love justice by suffering injustice. A legend for modern times.

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 25)

5.7. Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* as a Thriller:

D. with good intentions travels from his own war torn country to London to negotiate coal deal which he positively thinks would be helpful to his side with the war against the Fascists who appear to be helpful to the powerful international establishments. His positive movements and attempts are prevented at every stage by his opponent L. L is the agent representing the fascists. The opening sections of *The Confidential Agent*, when D. reaches Dover bring out the mood and images of death, mourning and disaster in the description of landscape and set it against the vitality of a boisterous football team. Greene plots his novel amid the mourning of-gulls, the cold foggy deck, a deck like map marked with trenches, impossible positions, salient, and deaths. D. tells that he has seen many people were shot on both sides of the lines for treachery. His wife was shot dead. For examples;

He had indeed brought the war with him: the infection was working already. He saw beyond the lounge-sitting with his back turned at the first table inside the restaurant --- the other agent. His hand began to shake just as it always shook before an air raid. You couldn't live six months in prison expecting every day to be shot -- anything else but a coward. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*,19)

The above-cited paragraph clearly reveals D.'s panic, fearful and psychologically thwarted situation. His panic and fearful situation is representative of an entire human society during the war. Espionage, secrecy, suspicion, panic, fear etc. are common features of thriller. The readers experience these features while reading this novel. D. and Chauffeur, L., s driver happen to be together. Chauffeur suspects D. and talks to him in a rude, fighting mood. D., being sensitive deals with him sensitively. However, Chauffeur strikes D. on his mouth. For example,

'What are you doing with my coat' ... D.

'What do you mean?' the Chauffeur said. 'I was hanging up my coat.

Are you trying to put something on me?’ ‘It seemed to me, D. said, ‘that you were trying to take something off me.’

‘Call a policeman’, the Chauffeur said.

---‘I got a good mind to knock your block off. A bloody foreigner coming over here, taking our bread, thinking you can do what...?’

‘If it seems so to you, I apologize again.’ D.

‘Why, I could make you lick my boots...’ the Chauffeur.

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 20-23)

The second world war, the coal deal, the two parties which stand to be beneficial, England as holding the power that could exercise influence on the course of the war, manipulation, conspiracy, suspicion, fear, despair, deception, suspense, panic, curiosity, deaths etc. these are the striking features of the story written in six weeks due to the existing urgency. The plot moves in spirals with pursuits and reversals which are essential aspects of an adventure story as a thriller. D. temporarily stays at the hotel. The manageress and Mr. K. are hostile to D. Else, a fourteen years old innocent girl takes maximum care of D. Else is overburdened and exploited in hotel. The manageress and Mr. K. work in favor of L, D.’s business opponent. They ill- treat D. out of jealousy and cruelty. The manageress and Mr. K. intentionally create number of difficulties in D.’s way for getting a coal contract. Moreover, they mentally harass him. D. undergoes tension, fear during his stay at the hotel. The following passage from the novel makes the readers understand the striking features of the theme of the thriller. The narrator tells:

She (the manageress) looked at him with complete indifference. It startled him. It was as if she knew more of his plans than he knew himself, as if everything had been provided for a long time ago, in her capacious brain. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 89)

Critical Comments:

The manageress suspects D. Her suspicious and negative treatment causes fear and panic in D.’s mind. Consequently, he is discouraged and confused. D. has his secret papers in his breast pocket. It was a risk to keep the papers at the hotel. L. wants to steal D.’s secret papers and confiscates the coal deal in his favour. D. wants to go to Benditch to meet Lord Benditch for the coal deal. He keeps his secret papers with Else, sincere, dutiful and reliable hotel maid. During D.’s absence, Else is targeted by the cruel manageress and Mr. K. and finally Else is murdered by them.

Else's cruel death is a terrible shock to D., because an innocent mind is cruelly quenched. The following passage makes readers feel the war fever. The manageress and Mr. K. are L's supporters. D. has a tension that they would hand over his secret papers to L. The manageress forces him to hand over his secret papers to her. She threatens D. "If you cheat up you'll find – oh, I can think up things."

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*,83)

The narrator narrates as:

He was lost and exhausted among potential enemies; the further you got away from the open battle the more alone you were. He felt envy of those who were now in the firing line. Then suddenly he was back there himself – a clang of bells, the roar down the street – fire engine, ambulance? The raid was over and the bodies were being uncovered; men picked over the stones carefully for fear they might miss a body - - He felt sick and shaken – The whole room began to shake. The manageress's head swelled up like a blister. He heard her say. 'Quick! Lock the door- Enemies... friends... He was on his knees.'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 84)

Critical Comments:

Through this passage, Graham Greene has accurately pictured the negative effects of war on human society. D.'s fearful, panic and exhausted situation is representative of human society. The Embassy episode is an additional feature of this novel as a thriller. Mr. Forbes charges D. for a fake passport. Forbes, Rose Cullen and D. go to the English Embassy to confirm the genuineness of D.,s passport. In fact, it was not a fake passport. Somebody has manipulated it. In fact, L. and his associates have manipulated it to defamed D. Later on, it was proved by the policeman that D.'s passport was genuine and somebody has manipulated it intentionally. The following expressions beautifully throw light on this incident:

Mr. Forbes said, I've come to make some enquiries on behalf of myself and Lord Benditch... '

'Anything we can help you in... we shall be so pleased.'

'We have been seeing a gentleman who claims to be an agent of your government. In connection with the sale of coal.' The stiff Embassy said, 'I don't think we have any information--- I will ask the Ambassador, but I am quite certain'--- His voice took more and more

assurance as he spoke.

The matter goes to the secretary. The secretary replies, ‘of course we know D. one of your most respected scholars---’ ‘But’, the secretary went gently on, he is the no longer alive. He was shot by the rebels in prison.’

‘No’, D. said, ‘that’s untrue. I was exchanged. Here – I have my passport’- What will you say now? That it’s forged?’

‘Oh no,’ the secretary said, ‘I think this a genuine passport. But it is not yours. You have only to look at the photograph.’ He (D) said hopelessly, ‘War and prison change a man.’

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 113-115)

Deception, disguise, tension, fear, and threatening are common elements of thriller like, *The Confidential Agent* and Greene has successfully included these elements in his all thrillers.

Critical Comments:

War is an evil act of human being. It causes violence, destruction, devastation, panic, fear, homelessness of citizens, animals and birds, deaths etc. War element occupies significant place in Greene’s *The Confidential Agent*. D. is terribly hurt for Else’s murder. He has a gun in his hand. He wants to shoot the person who murdered innocent, helpless and dutiful Else. For example: D. said quickly, ‘don’t make the mistake of thinking I won’t shoot. I am on active service.’ He said to the secretary, ‘Get over to that wall. I’ve has a gang of traitors after me ever since I came across. Now I’m going to do the shooting.’ (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*. 125) During the war, innocent citizens as well as helpless children are cruelly shot. The murder of Else is an illustration of an existing war situation. Greene writes:

It was apparently the absolute end – not only the end of Else but of thousands at home... because there would be no coal now. Her death was only the first and perhaps the most horrible because, she was alone; the others would die in company in underground shelters. Rage slowly ate its way... he had been pushed around.

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 124-125)

Critical Comments:

War is human being’s a negative and destructive activity. It crushes all. It does not discriminate innocent and guilty. It causes fear, panic, violence, homelessness. It

destroys social set up. People become homeless, fear, suspicion, violence, death etc are the result of warlike situation. Immoral, inhuman, selfish, cruel people take disadvantages of the warlike situation. Else is innocent. She is careful of D. Her selfless services and attitude towards D. are misinterpreted by the manageress and Mr. K. out of jealousy and misinterpretation become responsible for her death. The element of horror is commonly reflected in a thriller novel. In the present novel, Graham Greene artistically and skillfully includes the element of horror. For example:

The handle began to turn. He (D) called out sharply. ‘Let go or I’ll fire’ ... He started to run on his toes. Behind there was suddenly a clash of voices, the starting of engine. They were after him. He ran- but there was no exit. Was this the end again? He nearly lost his head. He was saved for moment by fog... He could hear a whistle blowing and presently footsteps coming slowly round the square: they were looking in the areas. He didn’t know how these things went in England. They were coming close. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 126-129)

D. runs, and hides somewhere and runs once again. The policemen pursue him rigorously. Rage was like vitality in veins. He thought of Mr. K. and the manageress and the dead child. ‘He swore that from now on he would be the hunter, the watcher, the marksman in the mews.’ (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 130). He is terribly angry with the manageress and Mr. K who have murdered innocent Else. He wants to take revenge on them. Part two of *The Confidential Agent* begins with BBC’s sensational news. The thriller consists of sensational news, incidents so that readers become more curious to know the further part of the story. The elements of suspense and horror equally play significant role in the thriller. The following two paragraphs are appropriate illustrations to prove the present novel as a successful thriller. The narrator writes:

Wanted by the police: an alien passing under the name of D. who was arrested this morning at the request of the - Embassy and made his escape after assaulting have two clashes the Ambassador’s secretary. Aged about forty- five, five feet nine inches in height ... He is believed to carry a revolver.” (Greene, *The confidential Agent*, 133)

The sensational news initiated discussion, expressions, gossips etc. among the people. The waitress in the hotel tells D. who stays temporarily in the same hotel that the girl (Else) was cross- in- love and she was mad about a man (D) – forty- five years

old. The following paragraph aptly adds to make the news more sensational. The narrator adds:

The story was in all the papers now- 'Gunman in Embassy' stared at him from a poster. They had his description, the charge- entering the country with a false passport... the fact that he had been staying in hotel where a maid had committed suicide that morning.

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 134)

The BBC'S news, 'Wanted by the police' given in the newspapers or through Television channels creates sensations among the readers, viewers and public in general. The poster of a forty-five years old man who entered the country with false passport and the maid in the hotel who were cross – in- love undoubtedly help the present entertaining thriller to make it more entertaining. It is also an ironical element that in reality, D. and Else are not cross –in-love. They are like father and daughter to each other. They are most caring to each other. They are well- wishers of each other. Public goes on interpreting news, events with incomplete information. It becomes a gossip. It entertains the public for a short duration of time. Of course, it creates sensations. Greene has very successfully used this factor to make the readers curious.

D. has a great deal of love and affection for Else. Being a man of language and literature, D. is quite sensitive. He wants to know the truth of Else's death. He reaches the room in the hotel and realizes with a shock that she (Else) was there, laid out ready for burial. D. had seen people dead in the street after an air-raid, but this death was different, a unique position reserved for one reason. Nobody was in pain. The false news is spread that Else jumped down through the hotel window and died. In fact, it is not true. D. firmly believes that the manageress and Mr. K. have murdered her and they are hiding the truth. He wants to take revenge on the person who is responsible for Else's murder.

D. thinks and comes to conclusion that Mr. K. is involved in Else's murder. D. disguises himself having strange moustache. His look is changed. The police pursue D. Mr. K., D and the police are in the same bus. D. follows Mr. K. Mr. K. realizes it. He asks D, 'You are following me. Why are you following me?' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*.146). They walk on the street. Mr. K. is fully drunk. The policeman asks him to go home. Mr.K.is fearful of D. He feels that D. will kill him. Mr. K. screams, 'I'll break the window. I'll will scream.' D. replies,

But you were driven always to copy what your enemy did. You

dropped the same bombs: you broke up the same private lives. He turned with sudden fury on Mr .K. and said, ‘You’ve asked for this.’
(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 162)

D. asks Mr. K. to be frank in giving details of Else’s murder. D. actually fires the bullet, but he hits the mirror. It was a blind shot at Mr. K. In D.’s words:

‘Oh no. I tried to, but it wouldn’t work. I’m a coward, I suppose. All I hit was the mirror. That’s bad luck, isn’t it?’

(Greene, *The Confidential agent*, 171)

This entire narration is quite thrilling, sensational, adventurous and entertaining. Greene has beautifully presented this episode. It makes readers curious to read the further part of the novel. It proves Greene’s statement that his ‘Entertainment’s are thrillers with their tools of crimes and intrigues, pursuit and escape, murder and suicide. D.’s mission to get the coal contract for his country is lost because of L, his business opponent. In fact, L. is the worst enemy of D. He purposefully creates a series of difficulties in D.’s way for getting the coal contract. D. is physically and mentally harassed by L. It was L. who had given the orders for the child’s (Else’s) death. L. and his associates continuously hate, despise and dislike D.

The police constable pursues D. He is wanted by the police, because D. is charged for using dead man’s passport, stealing L’s car and murdering Else. In fact, all these charges are manipulated by L, D’s cruelest enemy. L.’s intrigue,espionage, manipulations against D. add an additional element to make *The Confidential Agent* a better entertaining thriller. D. happens to meet three youngsters. They are gangsters. The Gang wants D.’s gun. The oldest boy says:

‘An’ now we want your gun. We know where they keep the dynamite.
All we got to do is bust the shed.’

(Greene, *The confidential Agent*, 209)

In the company of gangsters D. feels as if he were surrounded by animals who belonged in the dark and had senses adjusted to the dark. The boys have taken D.’s gun. The boys were not to be trusted; naturally D. is worried about the fate of his gun. He patiently waits for capture. Even the longest wait is over. He thinks of everything – of Rose Cullen, the future, the past, the boys with the gun – until there is no more to think about all. Greene minutely and accurately describes D’s mental state:

He thought of his wife: It represented all the ignobility of Life that he

felt the tie weakening between him, and the grave. People should die together, not apart. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 213)

D.'s wife has been a victim of war. He has seen children, innocent people crying and dying during the air-raids and bomb explosions. It represented all the ignobility of human life. It is a man-made tragic situation of human life. D. realizes the painful, torturing tie wreaking between him and the grave. He also acutely realizes his loneliness and alienation from his loving wife. He has been cruelly cut off from his affectionate wife. His situation represents innocent people's situation. He feels that people should die together and apart. Separation from the dear and near is more painful and torturing. D.'s above-cited expression reflects Graham Greene's philosophy, moral attitude and heartfelt feelings towards human being.

The policeman is on D.'s way. D. feels tired and sick. The Gang seems to have chosen their time for busting the shed. He feels physically shrinking from the noise which at any time now would tear across the quietness. The boys gathering round the explosives. inside the Baptist Chapel, the tuneless women sing:

'Praise to the Holiest in the Height...' fountain of all goodness and truth...we bless thee for all thy gifts so freely bestowed ...' We pray thee for our torn and tortured world... we would remember before the victims of war, the homeless and destitute...'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 215)

The above-cited collective prayer is a prayer to the holiest in the Height... fountain of all goodness and truth. It is a collective prayer for the homeless and destitute. It is also a prayer for our tortured world. *The Confidential Agent* was written during the World War II, during which British children were being evacuated carrying gas masks to stranger homes in the country. Many writers and professional joined a mysterious organization called the officer's emergency Reserve leaving their families without support. Greene himself satisfied his conscience in the army.

The three boys finally set the explosive shed off up at the mine. The policeman captures D. and leads him out into the dingy street. D. asked, 'What are the charges?' 'There'll be plenty', the policeman said, don't you worry. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 217) The police man locks D. in the cell. The gang of these boys set the explosive shed off up at the mine. It is an example of social, individual reaction to the Fascism. The gangsters represent common men. Common men are suppressed, ill-treated and economically exploited by the Fascists. Individually, it is

difficult for them to react. After undergoing consistent exploitation, finally they form groups and express their anger outburst such destructive reaction. The French Revolution is an ideal example in this respect.

D. is taken to London by the policeman for trial. His opponent tries to pin Mr. K.'s death on him. For rescue and a woman (Mrs. Bennett) are the witnesses. D. denies all the charges, because he knows that all the charges were intentionally manipulated by his opponents, especially by L. The identification parade is done. D. is alone in the cell. The old dreams return with a difference in his mind. The solicitor talks to D. He is satisfied with D.'s innocence. He says:

That's all right- that's being seen to. We're briefing Sir Terence Hillman. We feel that it's necessary as it were, to show that you are not friendless, that you are a man of substance.' – I assure you we are satisfied – The police are satisfied now that your passport is quite correct.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*. 225)

Regarding the child's (Else's) death there is no evidence. The entire situation is manipulated. D. feels doubtful about the trial. Greene writes, 'It seemed to D. - if you were dead.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 226) D. acutely realizes separation from his nearest and dearest. He realized separation when his loving wife became a victim of war. Now, he is separated from an innocent and loving Else. Therefore, he feels like this. A Prolonged noisy quarrel takes place in the court. It seems to D. quite meaningless. Sir Terence Hillman Said:

'I do object, your Worship, to the attitude of the police. At present they have mustered a long array of very minor charges. Being in possession of firearms... resisting arrest... and arrest for what? Arrest on a false charge which the police hadn't taken the trouble to investigate properly'... 'Political', Sir Terence exclaimed...He had no chance of getting his witness together...'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 227-228)

The Magistrates finds no serious charges and grants a bail to D. for a week. D. expresses thankfulness to Sir Terence. Conspiracies, espionage, deception, manipulation, disloyalties, jealousy, hate, despair etc. are the common features of the thriller novel. Greene has very successfully presented all these features in the present novel. Consequently, *The Confidential Agent* from Greene's point of view has become a better 'entertainment'.

After D.'s identification parade and court scene, the reader may feel curious to know the further happenings related to D.'s next movements and strategies. Graham Greene very successfully maintains suspense in the present thriller novel – *The Confidential Agent*. Mr. Forbes and D. look at each other with embarrassment. Mr. Forbes always carries jealousy and hate in his mind against D. He wants to send D. back to his country by hook or crook. Mr. Forbes says:

‘Well, you realize of course, that you’ve got to leave the country at once – before the police get any more evidence to connect you with that unfortunate affair. The gun would be enough...’

D. replies, ‘I don’t think they’ll find the gun.’

Mr. Forbes reacts,

‘You can’t take any risks- it’s technically murder. They wouldn’t hang you- you’d get fifteen years at the least’

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 230)

Mr. Forbes tries to demoralize D. He tells him:

You have got to leave to night. It won’t be comfortable, but there’s a tramp steamer with a cargo of food leaving for your place...you’ll probably be bombed on the way – that’s your own affair.’

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 231)

Mr. Forbes is in love with Rose Cullen. He wants to marry her. He is jealous of D., because Rose Cullen is genuinely in love with D. Forbes intentionally and out of jealousy keeps Rose Cullen away from D. D. does not get the coal contract. L. also does not get it. Political interferences have turned down their expectations. Greene makes Mr. Forbes to give the details related to the coal business. He informs D.,

‘To reopen the pits and then find the Government stepping in... Already there’s a leading article- about political gangsters and the civil war being fought out on English soil. We have to decide whether to sue the paper – Mail for libel or cancel the contract and announce that we had signed in good faith under the idea the coal going to Holland. So we cancelled. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 232)

Critical Comments:

Coal contract plays a significant role throughout the novel. Due to the political interferences, both D. and L. failed to get the coal contract. The authorities have

decided to send it to Holland. Obtaining the coal contract either by D. or L. proves to be the point of raising reader's curiosity in the novel. Hereafter D.'s future becomes the main point for raising reader's curiosity and Greene has been successful in sustaining it. Graham Greene creates suspense by writing the following:

It was certainly half a victory; he thought grimly that it would probably postpone his death – he would be left to an enemy bomb, instead of reaching a solution of his problems.

(Greene, *The confidential Agent*, 232)

Critical Comments:

D. is quite conscious of the existing situation. He is comparatively and partially freed from the manipulated charges. Now, he visualizes that he would be left to an enemy bomb. D. is on bail. He wants to spend his time as he likes. He is in Captain Currie's custody. Captain Currie advises-cum-warns D. to take things quietly. He tells him:

You'd better take things quietly – 'you've shot your bolt, man. You thought you'd get out of the country- but you can't, fail Scotland Yard. Best police force in the world.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 239)

Greene throws light on the social, political, and legal situations existing in England through a conversation between Captain Currie and D.

D. said, 'I thought in England people are supposed to be innocent until they are proved guilty.' 'Oh yes,' Captain Currie said, 'that's right-police don't arrest a man unless they've got the right dope- it's a mistake you foreigners make. In your own country you kill each other and nobody asks questions, but if you do that sort of thing in England, well, you're for it.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 239-240)

5.8. Consequences of War Presented in Graham Greene's *The Confidential*

Agent:

War episode occupies significant space in Green's *The Confidential Agent*. War creates monstrous situation. It destroys beautifully built-up human society. Directly as well as indirectly war consequences percolate in human mind causing psychological fear, tension and panic. Greene makes his protagonist (D.) express the consequences of war on helpless, innocent dutiful girl Else. He asserts:

It's only one girl,' he said, 'out of thousands. They die every day at

home. It's war.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 166)

Greene further adds:

Civil war provided nothing so fantastic as peace. In war, life becomes simple – you didn't worry about sex or international languages or even getting on: you worried about the next meal and cover from high explosives. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 179)

Critical Comments:

Being sensitive, Greene was always worried about horrible consequences of war on social life. War crushes children, young and old. They are cut off from their beautifully built homes. They lose their properties accumulated with strenuous efforts. Mothers and babies are cruelly cut off from each other. With enormous hardships they try to survive for their no error or mistake. While going to Benditch, D happens to meet the Porter. The Porter is acquainted with Lord Benditch, Rose Cullen, her mother and her nurse Mrs. Bennet. While listening to the stories related to the Benditch family, D's mind goes back. He thinks:

Here he was: shut out for a little while from the monstrous world. He could see, from the security and isolation of this cold-waiting room, just monstrous it was – It was a crazy mixture –the presentation at Court, his own wife shot in the prison yard – and the bomb falling; it was all hopelessly jumbled together – How was it possible for anyone to plan his life or regard the future with anything but apprehension? - But he had to regard the future. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 186-187)

Critical Comments:

D.'s thinking is representative thinking. Actually, the entire expression /thinking is of Greene's mind. Greene throughout his life thought and advocated human values which undoubtedly become useful for the welfare of human society. War is a monstrous activity. It is an outcome of few devilish –minded people. Beautifully planned human society is crushed and demolished within a few minutes. D. is greatly harassed however, he is optimistic of future. His thinking of future represents Greene's thinking of future. Through the conversation between D and the Porter, Greene has explicitly revealed the negative effects of war on environment and human beings. He writes: The siding loomed slowly up with a row of trucks marked – the rails stretched out towards a fence, a dark shape which became a barn and then

blackened winter field. Other platforms came into sight, shuttered and dead.

‘D. asks the porter,

Didn’t you say it was healthy here?’

The porter replies,

That’s right. ‘The healthy Midlands.’

‘But the damp...’

The Porter further adds:

Brick cottages detached themselves; the stamps of tree reminded him of a battlefield; an old metallic object rose over the crest.

The porter said, ‘that’s nothing. That was just a notion they got.’

An ugly-looking notion.’

‘Ugly?’ D questions the porter.

The porter replies, ‘It looks like something to do with all’- ‘They had a fool notion they’d find oil here. We could’ve told’ them – but they were Londoners.

They thought they knew.’ (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 188-189)

The above-cited conversation between D. and the Porter throws light on the commercial, materialistic attitude plus imperial attitude of the British Government. Materialistic attitude of a particular group of people plus imperial attitude of the British Government has done a great deal of damage of nature as well as of human society. It is the bitter comments on these attitudes. Human being needs development, but not at the cost of nature and human life.

Critical Comments:

Graham Greene has extensively presented the consequences of war in hills, grass, plain etc. He writes:

The woods and meager grass gave out as they pattered on from stop to stop. The hills became rocky –Then even the hills gave out and a long plain opened up dotted with strange erratic heap of slag.- Short unsatisfactory grass crept up them like gas flames; miniature railways petered out, going nowhere at all – lines of grey stone like scars – It was like gigantic rubbish heap into which everything had been thrown of a whole way of life – great rusting lift-shafts and black chimneys and Nonconformist chapels with state roofs and hopeless washing darkening on the line and children carrying pails of water from

common taps. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 191-192)

Graham Greene firmly believed in human values and encouraged human values for the welfare of mankind. D. feels the act of war as a futile act of human being. Greene writes about D.'s perception:

He (D.) did look. He was used to ruin, but it occurred to him that bombardment was a waste of time- once he got a glimpse of horrifying squalor in a backyard where a privy stood open. It was like war, but without the spirit of defiance war usually raised.

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 191-193)

D. is charged for travelling with dead man's passport, stealing L's car and killing Else. The policeman has a warrant related to these charges. He pursues D. rigorously. D. goes on hiding himself taking positions at various places. He comes to the Baptist Chapel where people pray God for the victims of war. Greene writes:

'We pray thee for our torn and tortured world... we would remember before thee the victims of war, the homeless and destitute...'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 215)

Critical Comments:

It is a collective prayer for the homeless and destitute people. War is man-made the cruelest and devilish activity. Some reckless political leaders become responsible for it, but its outcome is horrible. Innumerable innocent people are crushed for their no errors/ mistakes. Only sensitive and constructive-minded people realize the outburst of war. They call upon the Holiest supreme power for heavenly solutions. D. hears people praying for the victims of war. He stands against the wall of the Baptist Chapel hiding himself. He experiences fear in his mind. Greene accurately describes D's mental situation writing the following:

He (D.) had a sense that the whole wall above him was caring in to fall upon his face, and he screamed and screamed. He was aware of violence and not of noise – the noise was too great to be heard – He put his hands over his face to protect his eyes and screamed again: People ran along the street. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 126)

During the war, all moral codes are crushed. War causes distrust, suspicion, conspiracy, disloyalty, dishonesty, crookedness, cruelty etc. Graham Greene has presented the presence of war, its consequences on human beings, animals, creatures and environment in general. Being thoughtful and sensitive writer, he realizes the

suffering of our torn and tortured world during the war.

When war started the absolute moral code was abolished: you were allowed to do evil that good might come.

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 210)

5.9. Element of Humanism in *The Confidential Agent*:

Rose Cullen's humanness represents culture and civilization. She is the daughter of Lord Benditch, one of the miners of coal. She abandons wealth and socially dignified position for human commitment and returns to ideals. Rose Cullen and D. happen to coincidentally meet in connection with coal contract. She thinks that D. is a man respecting human values and trustworthy. She feels extremely happy in D's association and falls in love with him. She proves to be helpful to D. on various occasions as well as in critical situations. D. treats Rose Cullen with great respect. His love for Rose Cullen is genuine and selfless. She feels sick when D. was beaten and inhumanly insulted by Chauffeur, L's driver. She tells D:

'I just wished I could help you, that's all' -

After they'd beaten you up last night I was sick.

(Greene, *The confidential Agent*, 70-71)

Critical Comments:

Rose Cullen's above-cited expression is an example of her sensitive, well-cultured and civilized attitude towards human life. D., Rose Cullen, Else, Terence Hillman etc. in *The Confidential Agent* represent Graham Greene's humanism. Rose Cullen tries her level best to help D. in getting the coal contract. She is aware of the materialistic attitude of the miners and she advises D. accordingly. She firmly believes in the present situations. She tries her level best to make D. aware of the impending danger. She visualizes that D. will die soon. At the end of the novel, readers experience a genuine bond between D. and Rose Cullen. She talks to D:

'Oh, I know you're faithful – but I've told you I shan't go on loving a dead Man. --- When you are dead, She can have you. I can't compete then, and we'll all be dead a long, long time- you'll be dead very soon: you needn't tell me that, but now...'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 247)

Critical Comments:

All these expressions expressed by Rose Cullen towards D. actually touch in reader's heart of heart. She has accurately visualized the existing situations. She knows the commercial, materialistic and insensitive attitude of the miners. She realizes that the authority has decided to give death punishment to D. Therefore she tells D. 'You 'll be dead soon.' Another example of humanism in *The Confidential Agent* is the relationship between D. and Else. They co-incidentally meet in the hotel. Else is a fourteen years girl. She works as a maid in the hotel. Else is sincere, innocent and trustworthy. Soon, a bond of genuine love takes place between D. and Else. D. showers love on Else as his daughter. She realizes his fatherly love for her and starts taking maximum care of D. She is willing to do anything for D. She tells D.,

I won't let you down. You're gentleman –I'd do anything that girl I'll do - I don't mind their killing me.'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 79)

Critical Comments:

False news was spread that a hotel-maid has committed suicide. D. was greatly shocked to get this false news. He firmly believes that Else will never do like this. He believes that the evil- minded the manageress and Mr. K. are involved in Else's murder. He decides to take revenge on Mr. K. for Else's murder and he does it. D. entrusts his secret papers to Else. The loving bond between D. and else represents human civilization in true sense of terms.

One more illustration of humanness presented in *The Confidential Agent* is related to Dr. Bellows and his idealism. Dr. Bellows is the director of Entrenationo School. He firmly believes in human values and tries his level best to preserve the human values. Through his Language School, he wants to establish communication with the entire world. He believes that conflicts, fighting, wars etc. are harmful to human civilization. He believes that some good will come of all the anguish. He states, 'Then some good may come of all the anguish.'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 157)

Critical Comments:

Dr. Bellows 'Entrenationo School' is Graham Greene's imaginative creation. Throughout his life, Greene advocated human values. He firmly believed that crisis, conflicts, wars etc. are the outcomes of the lack of human values like culture, civilization, morality, honesty, etc. He feels that positive dialogues, communication

among individuals, social groups and nations will be the solution to crisis, conflicts and wars. Accordingly, he makes his philosopher character, Dr. Bellows to establish 'Entrenationo School' to have communication related to respect the human values among the individuals, social groups and nations. He believes that some kind of good will come which will be helpful to bring change in the present distorted situation.

5.10. Examples of Ironical situations in *The Confidential Agent*:

Mr K. appreciates L. as Chancellor of the University and informs D. that he is appointed as a professor. D. laughs at Mr K.'s presentation. There is disgust behind D.'s laughter. Mr K. and L. are disloyal, dishonest, devilish, corrupt and cunning. Mr K. has manipulated everything against D. out of jealousy and supported L. in all respects. They have a very ugly and distorted vision of artists. Taking into consideration the entire ridiculous situation and their devilish behaviour Greene rightly comments, 'This was to be the civilization of the future, the scholarship of the future.'

Critical Comments:

Greene wants to state that if negative, devilish-minded persons are in charge of the higher educational institutions like university where cultural, human values are inculcated in the minds of young learners then what kind of civilization and scholarship will be established. It is irony that such devilish minded-persons are in charge of university.

Critical Comments:

Another example of an ironical situation: When D. is taken to the ship having Dutch flag on it. D. feels that he is being taken to his country. Greene writes:

Well, he thought, I am nearly home. I am safe... if it was possible to think in terms of safety at all. He was safe from one danger and going back to another. (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 246) D. was unaware of the impending danger which was visualized by Rose Cullen – She tells D.' 'you'll be dead very soon.'

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 247)

Critical Comments:

Rose Cullen's visualization is absolutely correct. She knows that Forbes and his associates who are corrupt, devilish and negative –minded have already planned to

give D. death punishment. Forbes tells D.' 'You've got to leave to night. It won't be comfortable but there's a tramp steamer with a cargo of food leaving for your place tonight. You'll probably be bombed on the way-that's your own affair.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 231) One more example of an ironical situation in the present novel: The irony of Greene's title is that his agent (D.) can have confidence neither in himself nor those around him. He is cracked and deceived throughout as he makes his way around England.

The concluding part of *The Confidential Agent* is quite touching. D. is reminded of that the policeman has a warrant for him on charge... He replies, 'Never mind- I know what it's all about.'(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 243). It reveals that he seems to be mentally prepared to face the ensuing situation. A conversation between D. and Rose Cullen is quite touching one:

D. says, 'I'm an old man.'

Rose replies, 'If I don't care ...

Oh, I know you're faithful – but

I've told you I shan't go on

'Loving a dead man'- she visualizes that he will die soon. She says, 'you'll be dead very soon: you needn't tell me that, but now...' Rose Cullen had abandoned wealth and socially dignified position for human commitment and returns to ideals. Her love for D. is genuine. She has proved to be helpful to D. on various occasions as well as in critical situations. She believes in present. She is quite realistic. All these happenings make readers realize the reality of human life. *The Confidential Agent* as Greene states is a better thriller and it absolutely true.

5.11. Conclusion:

The political dimension depends upon the inseparable of economic power and war. This theme is repeated giving more emphasis on the comparison to Greene's earlier novel, *A Gun for Sale*, where the theme of the sale of ornaments supported by political power is skillfully connected with the main issues of exploitation and cruelty. In the name of money, wars are fought. War, struggle, conflict, the interest of industrial capitalism and justice are beautifully linked together. It has enhanced realism to a remarkable extent through the characterization of D. He is not a rebel against society like Raven from *A Gun for Sale*, but a political worker working against fascists. He is an active combatant in war as struggle. He fights for a human

cause. He is perfectly conscious. He willingly faces the consequences of war for human cause.

In *The Confidential Agent*, Greene has purposefully named his two characters as, D. and L. He did not want to localize the conflict. The absence of proper names and the conflict concentrated in professional designations - the priest, the Lieutenant, the Assistant commissioner of police, the solicitor, the Magistrate, the union leader etc. --- is a technique repeatedly used in allegory to any things struggle and ideals.

D. and L. walk the deck. They are separated by distrust and the fact is that the ship is English. They both move for Dover and England. All these elements create tension in the story - a tension between illusion and reality, between the dream of England, its peace and justice, and the plots of which the English people are still unaware.

D. carries the war with him. From his individual, national involvement, the myth rises to larger international issues beyond the frontier – He confronts the basic of the human condition: public causes and private grief, the tragic death of his wife, the death of Rose Cullen’s mother, the cruel murder of innocent and helpless Else, the human suffering that is in a sense, the condition of life. Two agents –D. and L. carry the war into England, a country seen as unaware, unprepared, indeed, of impending danger.

D. remembers his life in a peaceful city. It was blissfully protected from undercurrents of violence. Now, as an agent, he experiences conspiracy, distrust, disloyalty, immorality and deception. He finds nations and people compromising with core values predominantly for money and supreme power. L. is jealous of D. He is responsible for stealing D.’s secret papers and his suffering. D. was a professor of language. He keeps contact with Dr. Bellows, the director of the Entrenatiano - the language center. D. shares the simple idealism of Dr. Bellow’s – of love of the entire world – desires to be able to exchange ideas with everybody. Dr. Bellow’s thinking of exchanging human values and ideas and love seems to be ironical. In reality, existing situation is absolutely opposite. Bombs fall and London is in flames. The existing situation is highly explosive and sensitive. It is the time during which trenches are dug. British children are evacuated carrying gas masks to the strange homes in the country.

D. carries terribly reality within his person and moves through a deceptively peaceful landscape that does not reflect the dangers threatening society. He

memorizes a more innocent time when he walks on the streets of London as a carefree student devoted to his wife, to his scholarship and to the ideas. D. opens the past at several levels. The memories of peaceful prewar England, of his wife, of research in the British Library enter in his mind with consciousness of his war – torn country and of the realities of the present London scene. The present London scene conceals secret meetings in strange surroundings, counter – espionage, fear and innocent children like Else are being taken in net and cruelly murdered.

Peaceful and civilized time is juxtaposed with the threat of war. Peacefulness and civilized ways of prewar are also juxtaposed with espionage, distrust, disloyalty, deception and immorality. Contrasting use of phrases such as ‘the England of books and learning’, ‘this is London,’ ‘a city of peace,’ ‘the best political city in the world’ etc. emphasize the unreality of a precarious place and the brutal realities that often underlie lacks of civilization and culture.

Lord Benditch travelled from small beginnings as miner to his present position of power. Rose Cullen’s humanness represents civilization and culture. She abandons wealth and social position for human commitment and returns to ideas. She falls in love with D. and proves to be helpful to him in critical situations and comes out as a woman of principles. D. could not get the coal contract. Winning of the war is controlled by Lord Benditch. However, Rose Cullen, Benditch’s daughter falls in love with D. All these incidents seem like an excess of coincidence in *The confidential Agent* but the weakness inherent in such a device is balanced by humanness of Rose Cullen’s choice of abandoning of wealth and social position for a human commitment and returning to the ideas. Dr. Bellow’s ‘Entrenatiano School’ its mission and Else’s caring nature and innocence play significant role to balance the story of the novel.

As it is in Greene’s other novels, there is an international romanticisation of the past in *The Confidential Agent*. Fighting was better in the old days. Men were united by a common belief. The plot of this novel is developed like a game of chess and a military planned movement all at once. When D. loses the game but not the war to his enemy as a last recourse. He addresses the miners and hopes that the miners would understand the republican cause.

D.’s discussion with Bates suggests that the workers as individuals or even as members of a group are manipulated by both the union leader and the sympathetic intellectual. Bates does not have the courage of his convictions, ‘his weak mouth carried his shock of hair like a disguise, suggesting violence, a radicalism which

wasn't his at all.' (Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 203) D.'s desperate offer is thwarted by Bates. He prefers to believe Lord Benditch and his board who decide to deceive their way and go out of the way to sell the coal to L. Bates says:

‘I think the best thing we can do, Bates said, is to ask a definite assurance from Lord Benditch’s agent that this coal is going to Holland – and only Holland’ – ‘If he gives us that, why, We can go to work tomorrow with a clear conscience.’

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 204)

The coal ship going to Holland is only a cover-up. It does not concern Bates. The fact is that the miners need the wages and the opening of mines will provide the jobs that are needed, introduces the complex lay of the politics of survival.

The power of *The Confidential Agent* lies as much in its exposure of the secret agreement and betrayals of war as in establishing the bond between D. and Rose Cullen. The wheeler dealing frustrates D.'s hopes. As always with Greene, D.'s ideals suggest generalized revulsion of materialism as represented by popular culture. Innocence and homelessness of Else, exploitation of abandoned children make D. realize that he prefers the bombed streets and food queues from which a new world can be constructed to what causes as civilization.

The Confidential Agent is important because it contains the lines quoted by Philby to explain his attitude to Stalinism. The significant element is of loyalty-Graham Greene's loyalty to his friend Philby. The friends have maintained contact over the years. Personal friendship for Greene and for England is the supreme ethic. Le Carre observes that for Greene, individual loyalties are more important than social or human loyalties. Greene's individual loyalties are also intimately bound up with his social, human and philosophic loyalties. Greene has not moved from his position despite the realities of prevention in Communist Societies. He has frequently spoken out in defense of writers imprisoned in Russia. Graham Greene's comments on *The Confidential Agent* suggest many things that make up the novel:

There are certain things I like in this book: for example the predicament of the agent with scruples, who is not trusted by his own party and who realizes that his party is right not to trust him. In this case, it was the predicament of a Communist (although D. did not in fact possess a Party card). A writer who is a catholic cannot help having sympathy for any faith which is sincerely held and I was glad when Philby quoted this novel explaining his attitude to Stalinism.

It seemed to indicate that I had not been far wrong, although at the period I wrote, I know nothing of intelligence work.

(Greene, *The Confidential Agent*, 91)

It is a fact that Greene kept himself aloof and never joins the Left Crusade of his contemporaries during the Spanish Civil War. Greene's sympathies were more engaged by the Catholic struggle against Franco than with the competing Sectarians in Madrid. His support for the Sandinista Government in Nicaragua suggests the ideals of religion and politics that underlie his life and work. Graham Greene's political insights convince readers exactly because he keeps away from polemics and illustrates the ambiguities of experience in the world of ideologies and orthodoxies. Greene is criticized for romantic idealism. He tries to join irreconcilable elements in the interest of his art but he does not simplify issues. These are exposed in a variety of ways in relation to individual, to social groups, to national demands and to international developments. The fact is that *The Confidential Agent* has an unresolved political situation and a happy romantic ending. It does not diminish its grasp of struggle that is political and economic. Greene's statements have always been made in relation to policies and positions adopted by the Western Governments and economic establishments that compromise conscience and morality. In this sense, *The Confidential Agent* though set in a nameless country reflects directly on Chamberlain policies of appeasement.

Works Cited:

Abrams, M. H. *A Handbook Of Literary Terms Inver.* 2009.

Albert, Edward. *History of English Literature.* 1979.

Daleski, Herman M., and Hillel M. Daleski. *Joseph Conrad, the Way of Dispossession.* Holmes & Meier, 1976.

Greene, Graham, and Marie-Françoise Allain. *The Other Man: Conversations with Graham Greene.* Penguin UK, 1984.

Greene, Graham. *The Confidential Agent.* Open Road Media, 2018.

Greene, Graham. *Ways of Escape.* Random House, 2011.

Greene, Graham. *The Collected Edition: The confidential agent.* 1971.

Greene, Graham. *The Power and the Glory.* Random House, 2010.

**CHAPTER VI --- CRITICAL ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATIONS OF
IAN FLEMING'S *CASINO ROYALE* IN THE CONTEXT OF SOCIO-
POLITICAL PERSPECTIVES 136--165**

6.0. Introduction

6.1.1. Cold War

6.1.2. Cold War and World Politics

6.2.1. Arm Race

6.2.2. Cultural Impact

6.2.3. World Economy after the Cold War

6.2.4. International Politics

6.3. Social Issues

6.3.1. Male Dominance

6.3.2. Misogyny

6.4. Strategic Conspiracies

6.5. The Decline of Great Britain

6.6. Rich and Ravish Lifestyle

6.7. Greed and Corruption

6.8. Deceit

6.9. Conclusion

Works Cited

6.0. Introduction:

Every novel and film lover on the earth knows the legendary character James Bond presented by the novelist Ian Lancaster Fleming. Ian Fleming was born in a well- to-do family. He had been to various countries for different purposes and his experiences in these countries appear in his many novels. All of his novels in James Bond series were received well but the first five books were highly successful. His fictitious character James Bond became the social icon and many of the youngsters and playboys started to follow James Bond. The character became so popular that it became a part of our day to day lives. Every brave and adventurous person was started to be labeled as James Bond. The attitude to go for adventure was inculcated by James Bond among the youths. Gambling, love for luxurious gadgets and cars were followed by many of the contemporary generation. This way, the novel made a deep impact on social and political perceptions especially in the western countries.

Casino Royale is one of the first novels penned down by Ian Fleming. Later on, a series of books on spy theme was written by Ian Fleming and later adopted for films in the span of over forty years. His novel *Casino Royale* is an outcome of his professional experiences and skills of a writer. Ian's father was a member of parliament who later died during the First World War. Ian Fleming worked as the Director of Naval Intelligence of the Royal Navy during World War. The novel mostly exhibits his experiences and impressions that he received during his service of British Army. The novel gains its importance for the era in which it has been presented, which saw the decline of British Empire as a powerful empire. The novel presents a character that outsmarts all his rivals and wins the war and enhances grace of his country.

Casino Royale also presents the period of cold war between Russian and American allies, with special attention and a due importance to British part of American allies. It represents the bitter and cut throat fatal race between the two parties of cold war to outsmart each other. The readiness of both the sides has also been pictured to go to any extent to beat the other. Nationalism and sacrifice, duty, willingness to undergo pain, loyalty of British agents has been carefully and appropriately accounted. The opposite characters from the other ally (villains) have been accurately and extensively presented with flaws like physical deformity, luxury, excess, perversion and disloyalty. The portrayal of women has also been the point of

discussion among scholars as women have been presented as secondary and a way of sex symbol. Ian Fleming appears to be quite bold in presenting the political greed and social conditions developed during the cold war. Overall, the novel entertains all the readers who love literary works which are exciting and thrilling which could be studied to understand the war of spies and agents during the World War.

6.1.1. Cold War:

The cold war has had a great influence on the overall social and political scenario of the entire world. After the World Wars the entire world was thrown into the fire of cold war which was overtly invisible but roasted many countries and innumerable lives. America and Soviet Union fought the world war two as an alliance but things got changed after the war. The entry of Soviet Union in Europe alarmed America as a threat to its capitalist ideology. The contention between the two powerful countries became the cold war which was quite unusual then in the international politics.

The fight between Communism and Capitalism was severe. All the European countries with America wanted to curb the influence of Communism. These countries were quite desperate to be more powerful than their counterpart that begot various competitions and race among them. The cold war was actually a byproduct of the World Wars which escalated the political and military tensions between American allies and Soviet Union. Since the cold war was mainly fought with the act of gathering information and skillful use of it. Both the allies set up a system more fierce and powerful to gather secret information from each other and beat in various secret operations. These espionage activities started before the First World War and worsened during the Second World War. Since these operations were secrets and official documents of them were carefully maintained, the exact nature of the war becomes difficult one to be portrayed. However, eliminating the sources of information, agents and killing important officers and personalities of opposite allies was the strategy of the cold war.

This cold war has a deep impact on the social and cultural developments of both the countries. The patriotisms and national securities became the prime propaganda of political leaders and common people. It entered in to all forms of expressions from movies to literatures that were produced during the cold war. The political battle was not limited to the European countries only. America adopted

‘Containment’ policy under which it made itself committed to curb the influence and expansion of Communism in the world.

The researcher has taken the novel, entitled, *Casino Royale* for his research. It could be studied as the product of cold war. The cold war was being fought between two allies of the world in which prominently America and Britain were involved along with other European countries as American Allies. Readers come to know about the involvement of NATO, North Atlantic Treaty Organization through a proposed counter plan presented by ‘S’, the head of the staff to ‘M’, the code name given to the head of operations.

It would be greatly in the interest of this nation and North Atlantic Treaty Organization that this powerful Soviet agent should be ridiculed and destroyed, that his communist trade union should be bankrupt and brought into dispute, and this fifth column, with a strength of 50000 capable in time of war of controlling a wide sector of France’s northern frontier, should lose faith and cohesion.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 16)

This proposal talks about curbing a formidable and dangerous agent of U.S.S.R., controlled by Leningrad Section III through Paris, Le Chiffre. The reference to ‘This nation’ is about Britain itself while NATO stands for American ally. The cold war did not involve only America but a lot of nations willingly or unwillingly. The NATO alliance is an international organization where around twenty-nine countries from North America and Europe are members of it. It was established on 4th April, 1949 upon signing a North Atlantic Treaty. All the operations against the U.S.S.R. were carried out with the support from the NATO members. When British agent Bond is sent to control the Soviet agent Le Chiffre he gets help from American secret service agency CIA.

‘You seemed to get on well with him in Monte Carlo on that other Casino job. And I’m going to tell Washington because of the N.A.T.O. angel. C.I.A. have got one or two good men at Fontainebleau with the joint intelligence chaps there. Anything else?’

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 26)

The above conversation takes place between, ‘M’ and James Bond when he is being sent on Casino Royale job. Here ‘M’ mentions Bond’s success at Monte Carlo and hands over the next assignment. ‘M’ refers to C.I.A., American secret service

agency and their men present in Paris who could help Bond in case it is necessary. This shows a well co-ordination among NATO countries and their involvement in the fight against Soviet Russia. The cold war between these two groups was so harsh and blunt that they were ready to murder each other's agents and spies at any costs. British agent James Bond is assigned to undertake the Soviet Union at Casino Royale by making him bankrupt; whereas the Soviet agent is ready to clear off James Bond from his way. Bond is almost killed by the man of Le Chiffre at the game.

‘This is gun, monsieur. It is absolutely silent. It can blow the base of your spine off without a sound. You will appear to have fainted. I shall be gone. Withdraw your bet before I count ten. If you call for help I shall fire.’(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 104)

Bond deeply realizes the threat and acts very smartly and shrewdly. He already had been through two attacks which he escaped miraculously, but this seemed to be quite fatal one. Surprisingly, this was taking place in the Casino and in the public. The agents of both the sides were always living in threats and constant attacks. Many of the spies died for no reason so far known to their fellow countrymen. It was the outcome of ruthless cold war affecting the world politics.

6.1.2. Cold War and World Politics:

International politics has a dynamic nature and is very sensitive. Cold war is one of the important chapters in the history of international politics which sustained almost thirty to forty years affecting every country on the planet directly or indirectly. Tensions escalated highly among many countries. Politics of deterrence started to take shape. To be superior to others in the sense of technology, military power and other resources like food were the prime agenda of countries that divided into two groups.

The cold war left a long lasting impact on the overall world politics. Before the cold war the world was multicolor. Many countries shared the world power and played important role in the world politics. After the world war, the world was thrown into the cold war where two powerful sides emerged in world politics, one was United State and the other was the USSR. Now, with the emergence of the cold war, the world politics became bipolar. These two sides played major role in the world politics and influenced foreign policies of many countries. Later on, the world politics was divided between three groups, one was in support of Capitalism and the other was in the support of Communism whereas the third group liked to remain isolated and non-

aligned.

The politics of the countries involved in the cold war was revolving around patriotism and state of emergency. The political leaders were successful in creating a scenario of emergency in the context of the cold war and foreign attack. Most of the elections were contested on these issues and people were made think and vote under the impressions that they are going to be attacked by the foreign nation who believes in an ideology which differs to theirs. This political context was at the base of the foreign politics and policies of almost all the countries in the world politics.

American political arena was most influenced by the cold war. The presidency elections in America revolved around anti-communist campaign. People wanted their leader to be tough who can face Stalin. On the counter part, Stalin employed his secret service to affect presidency elections in United States. The foreign policy was all about anti-communist campaigns.

6.2.1. Arm Race:

The cold war gave birth to a steep competition to outsmart each other. In order to dominate and defeat each other, the countries involved in cold war started to strengthen their resources and military power. This aspiration led to arm race in the world. Huge amount of money and natural resources were invested for research and development of advanced military weapons to deter each other. This also led to reduction of money flow to the other aspects of society such as healthcare, education. National security was given the prime importance.

During the cold war United States of America and their counterpart Soviet Union engaged themselves in the development of nuclear weapons for the same large amount of money was put at stake. Very soon both the countries were equipped with arsenal of very dangerous atomic and hydrogen bombs. The world was under constant fear that if the war broke out between United States and Soviet Union what will be the fate of the world.

6.2.2. Cultural Impact:

The Cold War left deep impact on the culture and art. The tense international political scenario and the threat of destructive nuclear war was the common theme of most of the movies, literary books and other ways of expressions. The Spy movies and spy novels were quite popular where the readers were told stories of fictional

conflicts. Many stories, novels were written to amuse people by the fictitious bravery of their spies. *Casino Royale* is one of the art work written at the back drop of cold war which was liked by the readers. Along with it many other novels were written on the similar notes such as *'Red Storm Rising (1986)* by Tom Clancy, 1984 by George Orwell. *The Manchurian Candidate* by Richard Condon, *The Ugly American* by William J. Leder etc.

The cinema was the most effective way of expressions that was used extensively to condition and control peoples' opinion internally. Both the countries, United States and Soviet Union invested considerable resources to run specific propaganda and influence peoples' mind. In this competition, America was quite successful in using cinema to present Communism as one of the poor and unsuccessful ideology in the world. Specific spy movies were produced and to some extent monitored and channelized by FBI, an American agency. However, Soviet Union being under strict supervision and control of Stalin's could not use Cinema as effectively as America to promote Communism in the world.

Literature during the cold war flourished on the themes of individual against the system and secret agency of communist governments. Anxiety for nuclear war was also a subsequent theme in the literary world. Scientific experiments and their good and bad outcomes as well dominated the themes of the art works. The novel under study *Casino Royale* was also later adopted into film with the same name of the novel – *Casino Royale (1953)*. The other Bond movies *like You Only Live Twice, The Man With the Golden Gun, and Gold finger*, featured a rogue Soviet general as the enemy. Few other movies and video documentaries to be mentioned could be, *Invasion USA (1952), World War-III (1982), Duck and Cover(1951), Fail-safe (1964), The War Game (1965), The children's Story (1982), and War Games (1983)*.

In short, the cold war was at the background of all the art forms during the cold war. It was quite popular among people as people were conditioned to support the government's actions to deter opposite country's ideology.

6.2.3. World Economy after the Cold War:

During the cold war, the world economy was literally divided into two segments one of those who were with communists and the other who were with democratic countries. World war and the Cold war was the platform for the deadliest military race and conflict. This involved almost thirty countries from the world.

However it is considered to be the most conducive period for the growth of Capitalism and American Economy. The high productivity achieved during the world war was continued in the cold war as well. This strengthened the economy of the most of the countries.

The countries which were associated with United States were hugely funded by America resulting in gaining economic growth by such countries. America promoted credit-financed and consumption-oriented economy to create jobs and scope for mass production. This policy succeeded in helping the economy growth of the countries associated with America. Show off of such economy was used to mock economy of countries associated with the USSR. America provided capital to its allies through grants, loans and defense arrangements. The negative impact of it was also there. Most of the countries' economy was highly dependent on the economy of America.

Post war economic boom also left many social impacts as the number of inventions and scientific advancements were introduced in the lives of people which were by products of research carried out for strengthening the military power. GPS global positioning system was one of such advancements.

6.2.4. International Politics:

After the Second World War, the world politics was clearly divided into two groups, one which supported Capitalism and the other was to advocate Communism. The group of Capitalist countries was led by America though in the novel selected for the study depicts Britain leading along with NATO countries in which Britain was one of the important allies. On the other hand, Soviet Union was leading communist band. The world had got stuck between these two groups and their war games. Other countries had to join either of the groups. However, some of the countries like India managed to be isolated from the cut throat politics and ambitions of these two groups. The international relations among countries were refined after the World War. The countries standing on one side started helping each other and established dominance. Especially, in the covert missions and operation such involvement was crucial. In the present novel when British agency decides to take down a fierce agent of SMARSH, a Soviet Union enterprise, America and France come to aid of British Agent, James Bond. The rivalry between Britain, France America and Soviet Union is presented in the report which head of the S. submits it to M for approval.

Both of these organizations would doubtless be delighted to take over the scheme. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 17)

If the approval was not received from British government the reports clear that both the countries means France and America were ready to undertake the mission to get Le Chiffre bankrupt and take him down. This clears that the relation between Soviet Union and France along with America and Britain was not at all good. Earlier, Soviet Union was actually ally of these countries in the World War but later on, things changed and they became rivals. The active participation of American secret service agency CIA in the Bond's mission gets revealed when Bond meets CIA agent Felix Leiter at Casino Royale.

‘Thanks for the ride. Guess I owe you a drink. Will you join me?’
Bond had a feeling that this might be the C.I.A. man. He knew he was right as they strolled off together towards the bar, after Bond had thrown a plaque of ten mille to the croupier and had given a mille to the ‘huissier’ who drew back his chair. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 57)

The CIA agent that Bond met Felix Leiter informs to Bond that his seniors in Washington, D.C. America, have instructed him to render James Bond all type of assistance required to take down Le Chiffre. Bond gets happy to have CIA support. Later, Bond suggests Leiter to keep a watch on his new partner Mathis and on Le Chiffre's two gunmen. Following conversation takes places between them.

‘Anyway I’m under your orders and I’m to give you any help you ask for. With Mathis and his boys here, there may not be much that isn’t taken care of already. But, anyway, here I am.’

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 59)

The involvement of C.I.A. of America was very overt and expected as in the world politics, enemy of our enemy is our friend. America and Soviet Union’s rivalry was very obvious for many reasons. When British agent Bond takes on Soviet Union’s agent, C.I.A. jumps in to the scene to help Bond. In this way C.I.A. was helping their important ally in the cold war. It also highlights greatness of Britain over Americans where in this mission America is in subordinate role.

In one more incident, C.I.A. comes to help Bond when Bond runs out of money and loses a great some to Le Chiffre. Bond gets very badly defeated by Le Chiffre. The money made available to take down Le Chiffre goes in his hand. The

money which was supposed to be used to fight against the enemies now will be used by the enemy itself.

Unbelieving and yet knowing it was true, he felt the broad wads of notes. He slipped them into his pockets retaining the half-sheet of notepaper which was pinned to the topmost of them. He glanced at it in the shadow below the table. There was one line of writing in ink: "Marshall Aid. thirty-two million francs. With the compliments of the UAS' (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 101)

Felix Leiter, the C.I.A. agent comes to help Bond and hands him over a pocket. The pocket contains a bundle of notes and the message put with the money says that it is an aid of thirty-two million francs. This money gives bond a reason to be in the game and correct his mistakes. C.I.A. understanding the need of the time helps a British agent to take down their common enemy. This cooperation and relation between these two countries is revealing. The international politics was not firm with the ideologies but it was dynamic as per the situation and national interests. What was good for one country was bad for other. Even with the time the political perception were changing. This reality was expressed by Bond when he contemplates after being rescued from Le Chiffre's captivation.

'Of course,' he added, as Mathis started to expostulate, 'patriotism comes along and makes it seem fairly all right, but this country-right-or-wrong business is getting a little out-of-date. Today we are fighting Communism. Okay. If I'd been alive fifty years ago, the brand of Conservatism we have today would have been damn near called Communism and we should have been told to go and fight that. History is moving pretty quickly these days and the heroes and villains keep on changing parts.' (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 20)

When Bond shares above views with Mathis what he thinks after going through the torture laid by Le Chiffre. He says that the world politics is driven by the patriotism and the notions which tell people what it is good for their nation. However, what is good or bad for the nation is a dynamic notion. It keeps changing. What was wrong fifty years ago is suddenly okay today. This very nature of the world politics which was constantly changing was the problem. Especially for people like Bond who are ready to go to any extent for national interest. This could be addressed as one of the issues related to the world politics.

6.3. Social Issues:

In the early, 20th century, the role of women in social activities was not a very prominent one. But with the World Wars it changed drastically especially in European countries and America. The women were now secret weapons for political agenda and ambitions. Especially, during the cold war, the female spies were the most successful agents for both the allies. *Vesper* is the best example of such successful female spies. However, it was not the universal common social perspective. Women were still considered subordinate and not enough smart and shrewd like men. Most of the time, women were considered an object of fancy, distraction and physical pleasure. There are various situations in the novel where male dominance can be seen and felt.

6.3.1. Male Dominance:

The age-old masculine approach sustained in the society almost in all the parts of the world. The same reappears in the *Casino Royale*. The main character of the novel James Bond reasserts it at various occasions. This approach considers women to be subordinate and things to enjoy for sexual pleasure. Equality for women was still a thing to happen. This grave social issue peeps into the novel every now and then.

In most of the Bond novels by Ian Fleming, readers find an attractive Bond girl who is young attractive and smart. The novel presents her as per the defined standards of beauty and prettiness. The Bond girl in *Casino Royale*, *Vesper Lynd* is an ideal model for her typical physical appearance and possesses all the required characteristics and features to make any man fall for her. She seems to be a perfect girl to be with. It has been Ian Fleming's tendency in almost all the novels in Bond series to present the person, who belongs to Soviet Union ally, with a flaw. The main opponent of Bond in the novel, *Casino Royale* has been presented as a womanizer. Readers come across a formidable and dangerous agent of the U.S.S.R., controlled by Leningrad Section III through Paris, *Le Chiffre* who has been presented to readers as one of the strongest and smartest agent of SMARSH, the soviet agency. Readers are also made aware of his investment.

Le Chiffre was motivated more by a desire to increase his union funds than by the hope of lining his own pocket by speculating with his employers' money. However that may be, it is clear that he could have found many investments more savoury than prostitution, if he had not been tempted by the by product of unlimited women for his personal

use. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 12)

Le Chiffre invests his money with a purpose to gain some extra income by using his master's money but his investment plan underlines his character. He chooses prostitution not because it is the only business offering good margin of benefit or returns but for his own pleasure. He likes the company of girls and prostitution can offer him that pleasure. By running the prostitution he can be in constant company of girls from his staff that he wanted. This throws light on the masculine side of character wanting girls for his personal pleasure. The women have been considered as a means of pleasure for men.

Most of the female espionage operations were successful solely based on the basic instinct of men who considered women for physical pleasure. This success proves that this basic instinct had been universal even during the World Wars. In one more incident readers come across a conversation where women are praised for their physical attractiveness rather than for their talent. Mathis, Bond's accomplice tells about Bond's new assistant, he describes her in most sensual way. He puts more stress on her beauty. While describing, her Mathis observes Bond's reaction and goes on describing her.

'First of all,' and he inhaled a thick lungful of caporal, 'You will be pleased with your Number Two. She is very beautiful (Bond frowned), 'Very beautiful indeed.' Satisfied with Bond's reaction, Mathis continued: 'She has black hair, blue eyes, and splendid...er... protuberances. Back and front,' he added. "And she is a wireless expert which, though sexually less interesting makes her a perfect employee of Radio Stentor and assistant to myself in my capacity as wireless salesman for this rich summer season down here.'

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 32)

In the above excerpt readers come to know about Ms. Lynd. Mathis introduces her in most erotic way. Ms. Lynd is going to join Bond in his task of beating down Soviet Union's agent; she should have been introduced by her skills which will be more useful in this mission whereas, Mathis describes her beauty. This presents the view of men towards women with beauty. This gets continued in chapter five of the novel, initially Bond is not happy to have a female assistant but when he gets to see her, he becomes happy. Bond gets impressed by Ms. Lynd's beauty. Bond meets her in the restaurant where Ms. Lynd's physical characteristics are described in detail.

Her hair was very black and she wore it cut square and low on the nape of the neck, framing her face to below the clear and beautiful line of her jaw. Her bare arms and hands had a quality of repose and the general impression of restraint in her appearance and movements was carried even to her finger nails which were unpainted and cut short. Her medium-length dress was of grey 'soie sauvage' with a square-cut bodice, lasciviously tight across her fine breasts. Bond was excited by her beauty and intrigued by her composure.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 42)

Readers come to know about Ms. Lynd's black hair and a perfect jaw line. Her carefully cut finger nails and her dress being tight around her fine breasts. These details for a spy novel and the mission may seem unconnected but they create an assumption about women as a beauty to be appreciated. This extra detailed description of Ms. Lynd's physical beauty puts her talent under the carpet. Throughout the novel, readers meet Ms. Lynd more often as a pretty girl than a radio expert. The novel presents women in the form of thing of beauty rather than a lady of a talent. The social status for men was more of aesthetic. Women were scarcely praised for their talent. This social phenomenon peeps through the novel which makes readers aware of social issues related to women indirectly presented in the novel.

Bond's desire to have Ms. Lynd in the bed shows hypocrisy of Bond. In the beginning, he did not want to have a female assistant but later on persuaded by her beauty and not by talent starts liking her. The following piece from the novel proves it.

He was quite honest to himself about the hypocrisy of his attitude towards her. As a woman, he wanted to sleep with her but only when the job had been done. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 44)

Bond's liking of Ms. Lynd is based on her physical beauty and not her talent. Though Ms. Lynd possesses certain talent for which she had been selected for this mission to assist a double O agent like Bond. Hardly Bond refers to it. This reflects western civilization and the perspectives for women in then time. As a male, Bond's feeling of superiority lies in his sex. His urge to be superior lies in the same. The excitement he gets by undertaking various dangerous missions could be altered with sex as it gives the same sense of superiority and climax to him. His hypocrisy towards women gets revealed. In the chapter thirteen readers come to know about Bond's

desire to have Lynd Vesper in his bed to celebrate the mission accomplishment.

He gazed for a moment into the mirror and wondered about Vesper's morals. He wanted her cold and arrogant body. He wanted to see tears and desire in her remote blue eyes and to take the ropes of her black hair in his hands and bend her long body back under his. Bond's eyes narrowed and his face in the mirror looked back in the hunger. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 118)

After winning the game, Bond gets excited and impatient to have Vesper in his bed. He plans to get Vesper's cold body under his and dominate her in the physical play as he does with his enemies in all the missions. When he looks himself in the mirror his hunger reflects in the mirror. This hunger is nothing else but the male craving of sex and power over women. The greed of dominance is at stretch in the subsequent chapters especially in the chapter twenty-three titled as 'Tide of Passion' readers come across Bond's manly desires as follows:

And now he knew that she was profoundly, excitingly sensual, but that the conquest of her body, because of the central privacy in her, would each time have the sweet tang of rape. Loving her physically would each time be a thrilling voyage without the anticlimax of arrival. She would surrender herself avidly, he thought, and greedily enjoy all the intimacies of the bed without ever allowing herself to be possessed. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 201)

Bond wishes to conquer the sensual beauty of Vesper. He says 'conquest of her body' as if she is an entity and needs to be own. This power hunger for beauty reveals his male dominance and manly cruelty. In most of the literary art, beauty has been handled gently and with utmost care. Beauty has been praised and worshipped but here Bond doesn't seem to be in that mood. Moreover, Bond compares Vesper's private company to have a taste of rape which is the most inhuman and cruel way of sexual encounter. He also believes and hopes that Vesper will surrender herself and he will enjoy all the intimacy of bed without letting her dominate in the play. All the desires and expectations and his overall mind set seems to be male dominant and aggressive. Even Vesper is aware of it, she hits it when she says:

'Darling, the bath's absolutely right. Will you marry me?'

She snorted. 'You need a slave, not a wife.'

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 203)

This comment by Vesper makes it very clear that she knows Bond very well. She has assessed Bond very well as a dominant sex driven male. When Bond asks her to marry him she replies that he needs a slave who will be under his dominance all the time and surrender herself to him. This remark proves Bond's dominant nature as a male. Bond's manly ego doesn't let him understand Vesper's smartness. Which the readers come to know in the few final chapters. Bond's utter pride was his masculinity. He always treated himself above women. This was analyzed and reviewed by Le Chiffre already. After captivating Bond, Le Chiffre plans a perfect way to torture tough Bond to get his money back. He hurts Bond's genitals to hurt his masculinity, where his pride resides.

He was utterly a prisoner, naked and defenceless. His buttocks and the under part of his body protruded through the seat of the chair towards the floor. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 17)

This torture was aimed to attack manhood of Bond and break him mentally. The psychological torture laid upon Bond was more hurting for him than the physical hurting. The scene highlights the importance of manhood than the life of Bond. The male consciousness was severely damaged by Le Chiffre. This shows the male dominance and dominated social perspective of manhood. Le Chiffre knew that Bond is a celebrated and tough agent. He can withstand with the physical pain will not care for his life when national interest is there. Le Chiffre wanted to break down Bond and gets his money back. Le Chiffre also attacks Bond with words.

‘You see, dear boy?’ He smiled a soft, fat smile. ‘Is the position quite clear now?’ (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 17)

When Le Chiffre talks about the right position he talks about the torture inflicted on Bond's genitals. He indirectly suggests Bond to cooperate and save his manhood. This overrated importance to masculinity indicated to male dominance ideology.

6.3.2. Misogyny:

The protagonist of the novel James Bond at many a time appears to be a misogynist. His approach towards Lynd Vesper, his assistant in the mission, is not at all pleasant. He overall underestimated women to men. He believes that women are to follow men and not to interfere in men's affair. Women are good in bedrooms and not at the business. Bond's this kind of reflection upon women reveals his misogynist

perspective. Bond's this kind of thinking could be an outcome of the collective social consciences developed long ago in the past and still dominating the men. Women were still referred to as a thing of beauty and a warm company that a man craves for. This belittled presentation throws light on the women's status in the society. This gets further confirmed when Bond reacts to it as follows:

Bond was not amused. 'What the hell do they want to send me a woman for? He said bitterly. 'Do they think this is bloody picnic?' (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 32)

Here, Bond doesn't agree to have a female assistance in the crucial mission that he has been assigned by his government and agency. His reaction to a female assistance underlines his male dominated attitude and his disapproval for women to undertake important missions. He also comments that women can accompany on picnic and excursions where people enjoy and they are not involved in any serious business. Bond's question, 'Do they think this is bloody picnic?' discloses social attitude towards women even when women were playing crucial role during the World War. This type of presentation talks about the social issues like equality and need of support for feminism in the early twentieth century. There has been a lot of technological advancement and considerable changes in overall lives of human which could not alter the age- old male dominance culture. Readers come across such instances in the novel every now and then where Bond, a man is the hero and Ms. Lynd, a woman is a thing of amusement and pleasure. In the fourth chapter, during a conversation between Mathis and Bond, readers come to know this male mentality towards women when Bond says:

'Women were for recreation. On a job, they got in the way and fogged things up with sex and hurt feelings and all the emotional baggage they carried around. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 35)

Bond is displeased to have a female partner in the mission. She has been referred to as 'Number Two'. Bond cannot believe that a woman has been sent for his assistance by the agency. Bond's belief that 'women are for recreation' expresses his approach towards women. As he believes that women are for sex, pleasure and giving birth. Women carry a luggage of feelings and emotions. When women are on mission they get the things confused with sex and feeling which diverts men from important duties. A world class doubles 'O' agent saying this all is quite unacceptable. It clearly describes the grave social issue towards half of the population of world. It is more

striking when it comes from a man who represents one of the advanced and developed countries like Britain.

Lynd Vesper who is a double agent she works for Britain as well as Russia. She is far smarter than Bond but she doesn't show off it. Bond feels that she just a girl with attractive physical beauty. He also considers that she doesn't know anything about the game that he going to play to take down Soviet Union's agent. In the chapter twelve, Bond comments:

But then, Bond reflected, she knew nothing of the game. Had no notion, probably, of the bitterness of his defeat.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 101)

This reflection of Bond on Lynd Vesper is not correct. She has been sent on this mission to aid Bond. She is well aware of the game. She never talks about it and shows off her skills and talents openly. Her taciturn nature is taken wrongly by Bond. Vesper is very well aware of Bond's defeat and she knows that Felix Leiter is arranging the money which Bond needs to be in the game.

The other presentation of women that has been highlighted in the novel is the ease women with prohibited things like smoking cigarettes and drinking alcohol. Bond meets his assistant in the mission Ms. Lynd, a lady with exceptional beauty and a thing of admiration. James Bond and Ms. Lynd sit in the restaurant and wait for a game to start. The observation of Ms. Lynd is given as follows.

The girl sat silent. She accepted one of Bond's cigarettes, examined it and then smoked it appreciatively and without affectation, drawing the smoke deeply into her lungs with a little sigh and then exhaling it casually through her lips and nostrils. Her movements were economical and precise with no trace of self-consciousness.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 41)

Ms. Lynd takes a cigarette from Bond and she starts smoking it. The way she smokes the cigarette seems that she is comfortable with it as if she is used to it. She draws the smoke deeply into her lungs and exhales it through her lips and nostrils, which is generally done by a pro-smoker. Here, the presentation of a woman by the author seems to be conditioned by male imaginations of women as per their comfort.

The harshest comments passed by Bond can be found in the chapter fifteen of the novel. Bond and Vesper go to a club to celebrate Bond's victory. Bond actually wanted to woo Vesper and to have her in his bed. Vesper doesn't show any sign that

may encourage Bond. After some time a bar attendant hands over a note to Vesper. Vesper says that it is Mathis who wanted to see her at the entrance hall. Later on, she gets kidnapped by Le Chiffre. Bond comes to know that it was a trap. Bond gets angry and utters following words in anger.

These blithering women who thought they could do a man's work. Why the hell couldn't they stay at home and mind their pots and pans and stick to their frocks and gossip and leave men's work to the men. The silly bitch (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 126)

Bond once again speaks about women in general. He gets angry and justifies his dislike for women for men's job. In the above example, Bond says that women should stay at home and mind their kitchen job. Moreover, women can talk and get involved in the business of cloth and fashion or they can plunge in gossips. He feels that women are good only at things like kitchen work and gossiping. They should not try to get into men's business as it is not their forte. At the end, he calls Lynd Vesper the silly bitch and vents out his anger and frustration. Readers also come to know about Bond's selfishness. Bond keeps thinking about him and his success at the game and blames Vesper for ruining the celebration by getting kidnapped. His frustrated comment as follows exposes his selfishness.

And now for this to happen to him, just when the job had come off so beautifully. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 126)

He is more irritated by the thought that Le Chiffre may deal with Bond by keeping Vesper as a hostage. Bond is not ready to deal with Le Chiffre in exchange of Vesper at any cost. He believes that it was Vesper's foolishness that she became a part of the mission and got kidnapped. Bond follows Le Chiffre and gets caught by his men and sees Vesper for the first time after getting kidnapped. Even then he gets angry with Vesper.

His first reaction was one of scorn. Damn fool girl getting herself trussed up like a chicken, having her skirt pulled over her head as if the whole of this business was some kind of dormitory rag.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 134)

Bond's first reaction is of scorn. He blames Vesper for ruining the entire mission by getting caught. He even makes fun of her condition where her skirt has been pulled up and tied with the hands covering her face and keeping her legs naked. Bond's reaction to Vesper at such critical moment exposes his real personality where

he loves himself and hates women for their foolishness. Even after the incident when Bond is hospitalized and is on the way of recovery he avoids meeting Vesper in the beginning.

Bond was bored at the idea of having to explain some of this to Vesper. And he was embarrassed at having to ask one or two questions which mystified him, questions about Vesper's behaviour. The answers would almost certainly make her out to be a fool.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 178)

Here, as well Bond doesn't consider Vesper to be smart enough. He avoids her because he believes that after meeting Vesper will not be able to answer the question and prove herself fool. Actually, Vesper is a double agent and she is far smarter than Bond. He also thinks of doing a favor to Vesper by not making 'M' aware of her foolishness which may cost her job. This approach of Bond towards Vesper fortifies his misogynist attitude. In one more striking example, readers get a view of Mathis and Bond while they are talking to each other. After getting rescued from Le Chiffre, Bond starts contemplating on whose side he is. He speaks out his dilemma of good and bad. Bond feels that Le Chiffre is correct at his own place as he must be thinking that he is on good side and the same is with Bond.

'Now in order to tell the difference between good and evil, we have manufactured two images representing the extremes — representing the deepest black and the purest white — and we call them God and the Devil. But in doing so we have cheated a bit. God is a clear image, you can see every hair on His beard. But the Devil. What does he look like?' Bond looked triumphantly at Mathis. Mathis laughed ironically. 'A woman.'

'It's all very fine,' said Bond (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 172)

Here, Mathis compares a woman to be incarnation of devil. What makes them to compare a woman to a devil is their male dominating perspective cultivated by the social approach towards women. Bond has always believed that women are the source of all the troubles as they are not smart enough to handle the things.

6.4. Strategic Conspiracies:

A political ambition becomes national agenda in the world of politics. This agenda is planned to achieve by all means. This begets too many events and

happenings in the world politics where no matter is limited to a certain country. Countries came up with horrible and grave conspiracies to push forth their agenda. Cold war is the best example of such ambitions and conspiracies. These conspiracies have no limits. The lives of people and people's hard-earned money are put on stake at such occasions. The novel, *Casino Royale* presents this reality through the development of the plot of the novel. Deaths and sacrifices of lives become trivial things. Though the open war was over but the cold war still claimed many of lives and demolition of thousands of dollars' worth infrastructure. When Bond arrives at Casino Royale with a mission to overturn and restrain Soviet Union's powerful agent Le Chiffre, the series of conspiracies begin to take place. The agents from both rival groups start beating each other in the conspiracies.

The sentence was never finished. Suddenly a few feet away the entire plate-glass window shattered into confetti. The Blast of a terrific explosion, very near, hit them so that they were rocked back in their chairs. There was an instant of silence. Some objects pattered down on to the pavement outside. Bottles slowly toppled off shelves behind the bar. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 44)

In the above description from the novel, a conspiracy to kill Bond gets revealed. When Bond and Ms. Lynd meet in a restaurant, a bomb goes off tearing apart everything in its way. Bond seems to be the target of the bomb. People get hurt and some lives are lost. Luckily Bond and Ms. Lynd get saved from this fatal conspiracy. The cold war starts affecting innocent people around it and people get dragged in it unknowingly. This lethal race between two groups of world turns out to be claiming lives. People involved such conspiracies some time get heavily paid with their lives. In one more incident the executors of the conspiracy get killed in attempt to kill Bond.

Red man seemed to give a short nod to Blue-man. With a quick movement Blue-man unslung his blue camera case. Blue-man, and Bond could not see exactly as the trunk of plane-tree beside him just then intervened to obscure his vision, bent forward and seemed to fiddle with the case. Then with blinding flash of white light there was the ear-splitting crack of a monstrous explosion and Bond, despite the protection of the tree trunk, was slammed down to the pavement by solid bolt of hot air which dented his cheeks and stomach as if they had

been made of paper. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 47)

When Bond leaves the restaurant he spots two men standing on the raid with one blue and one red camera cases. Initially, he doesn't doubt them but when Bond is around fifty feet away from them an explosion takes place. The explosion was so powerful that Bond is slammed down. The explosion was carried out by those men whom Bond had spotted already. But the explosion could not go as planned, Bond gets saved once again but this time he gets hurt badly. The tree trunk which could have protected Bond proves to be useless. This incident also highlights the very deceitful and unreliable developments taking place under various conspiracies. Who is saving whom cannot be identified with complete confidence. Some of the agents are double agents who support rival agency and acts against their own agency in greed of money.

In fact, the smoke –bomb was a pure invention to make the buglers think they could get away. Both cases contained an identical high explosive bomb. There was no difference between the blue and the red cases. The idea was to destroy you and the bomb-throwers without trace. Presumably there were other plans for dealing with the third man. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 72)

The two men, who were actually hired to kill Bond, were going to die in the same plan as it was already planned by the conspirers to kill these two men who were important part of the plan. The two men with blue and red camera case also get killed in the incident. Readers later on come to know that the two men were not told about bombs in the both cases. In fact, they were told that one case contains a smoke bomb which will help them to escape the site. The planner wanted to kill the both men along with Bond. The ruthless aspect of the conspiracy shocks everyone.

Even readers find Bond starting to build a conspiracy in his mind when Vesper gets kidnapped. Bond is not ready to give up his victory and the money he got by defeating Le Chiffre in the game to save Vesper. Even while following the car of Le Chiffre, Bond decides to fire at the car being careless to Vesper's safety. He also thinks to show as he doesn't know anything about Vesper and avoid the problem.

If Le Chiffre put the touch on Bond for the money in exchange for the girl, Bond would do nothing and tell no one. The girl would just have to take it. If the commissionaire came along with the story of what he had seen, Bond would bluff it out by saying he had had a drunken row

with the girl. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 127)

A conspiracy against enemy can be justified as a need to save the country. In the above excerpt from the novel readers can see that Bond is planning his strategy to counter the situation of Vesper's kidnapping without having to deal with Le Chiffre. Here, his priority is his victory over Le Chiffre. He doesn't want to ruin it for Vesper. Even he starts to think about Mathis and other people who may enquire him about Vesper. Bond plans to lie to them about Vesper's kidnapping in case Le Chiffre demands money in exchange of Vesper. This incident in the novel is enough to explain that the cold war was not just between few countries but it was among the people who are involved in this dirty game. There are conspiracies and deceptions everywhere in the power game.

The various conspiracies take place throughout the novel. Even there is a conspiracy between Vesper and Bond who are actually co-workers. Bond is thinking about marrying Vesper. They both don't know each other. Vesper is a double agent who is working for Soviet Union as well as agency of Bond. Vesper at one moment hits out that Bond doesn't know her well.

'People are islands,' she said. 'They don't really touch. However close they are, they're really quite separate. Even if, they've been married for fifty years.' (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 205)

Bond ignores it as he believes that she is high on alcohol. Here, Vesper hits out that Bond doesn't know her very well which means that he is not aware of her connection with Soviet Union's agency. A game is being played with Bond but he being under the effect of Vesper's beauty and desire to have a sex with her doesn't understand it.

6.5. The Decline of Great Britain:

Ian Fleming was a British writer and wanted to present his Britain as a powerful country as it used to be before its decline after World War two. Ian Fleming was associated with Royal Navy. He was aware of loosened grip of Britain over colonial states and world politics. This made Ian Fleming to think about a character as good as a superhero. James Bond is the result of Ian's patriotic desires. James Bond who represents Britain has been portrayed almost impeccable and able to protect the world from various threats. Through this, Ian wanted to reinstate British glory. The novel, *Casino Royale* is a story of most dangerous and extremely talented British spy

who helps the world by taking down Soviet Union's agent. In this way, British agent helps all the twenty-eight countries of NATO. This greatness of Britain underlined in the heroic deeds of Bond and it throws light on the socio political image of Britain in the world politics. Readers come across a conversation where Ms. Lynd is talking about Bond.

‘The office was very jealous although they didn't know what the job was. All they knew was that I was to work with a Double O. Of Course you're our heroes. I was enchanted. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 74)

Lynd's these feelings for Bond represents the feelings of the country which enjoyed the superiority over world for a long time. Unfortunately, the country had lost its control and dominance after the World War. When Lynd says 'you are our hero' this speaks for the country. It was Ian's dream and attempt, as former army personnel, to see the country's glory back. This desire got fulfilled by presenting a great British spy who saves the world from many threats.

6.6. Rich and Ravish Lifestyle:

Ian Fleming's novels take in the world where people are rich and enjoy a luxurious life. Readers come across another world where money is in abundance and power is handy. Readers get exposed to extremely expensive and rare cars with amazing facilities. A special stratum of society, which is elite and wealthy, is portrayed in the novel. The hero of the novel is fond of luxurious things and villain is wealthy guy with bad motives. Both are extremely influential and powerful. Glamorous casinos hotels and comfy hotel rooms are common things in the novel which may not be common for most of the people in the world.

Casino is at the center of the novel. The Casino has been described very well so that readers come to know about the money poured into its building highlighting its importance in the society. Readers also come to know about various countries and their rich people coming to Casinos and betting a huge amount of money on gambling. These people represent an elite class of people who have a lot of money and time to invest (or waste) in Casinos for their pleasure. Readers have a description of few of the players at the table which reveals the players and their backgrounds.

At Number 7, on his right, there was a Monsieur Sixte, a wealthy Belgian with metal interests. At number 9 there was Lord Danvers a man whose francs were presumably provided by his rich American

wife. Number 2 was to be Carmel Delane, the American film star with alimony from three husbands. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 85)

Casino culture shown in the novel under study presents a completely different part of our society. In this part of society, rich people live and enjoy their lives. Here money is not a big deal as everyone has it enough. The description of each member at the table explains their background. Most of the members on the table got the money by easy way. First of all readers meet Monsieur a wealthy Belgian who has business in metals. Then readers meet Lord Danvers who has got money from his rich American wife. An American star who married three men till date and left all of them and got huge amount of alimony from her husbands, now she is at casino to spend that money. She seems to have got married three men for their money and later left them. In this part of world relations and hard earned money are rare. In fact, this world is dominated by lavish lifestyle and luxurious life. Bond himself is fond of good and luxurious things. Readers have reference to his expensive car Bentley which he loves the most. In the initial chapters, readers are told about rich and luxurious taste of Bond.

Bond's car was his only personal hobby. One of the last of the 4½-litre Bentleys with the supercharger by Amherst Villiers, he had bought it almost new in 1933 and had kept it in careful storage through the war. It was still serviced every year and, in London, a former Bentley mechanic, who worked in a garage near Bond's Chelsea flat, tended it with jealous care. Bond drove it hard and well and with an almost sensual pleasure. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 39)

Bentley was the most expensive and luxurious car of that time. Readers come to know about its power. Bond takes care of his car with utmost care. Its servicing is done regularly. The driving experience has been compared to sensual pleasure.

6.7. Greed and Corruption:

Greed and Corruption is one of the sub-themes of the novel, *Casino Royale*. Everyone is working for his own greed. Most of the characters in the novel are motivated by greed. This greed leads them to their doom. Everyone wants to gain something by deceiving someone. The Casino itself stands for 'Easy Gain and Easy Lose'. Casino is the place where people win money easily in a few seconds and they lose huge amount as well. The very first beginning lines of the novel open with the description of the Casino. It has been described as filled with greed and fear. Players

have greed to get more money easily and fear of losing the same.

The scent and smoke and sweat of a casino are nauseating at three in the morning. Then the soul-erosion produced by high gambling—a compost of greed and fear and nervous tension—becomes unbearable and the senses awake and revolt from it. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 01)

This emotion of greed dominates most of the players and many a times results in tragedy. Most of the part of the novel revolves around Casino signifying this place and emotions associated with it. Corruption being associated with greed keeps playing throughout the novel.

‘Monsieur Le Chiffre made two million. He played his usual game. Miss Fairchild made a million in an hour and then left. She executed three “bancos” of Monsieur Le Chiffre within an hour and then left. She played with coolness. Monsieur le Vicomte de Villorin made one million two at roulette. He was playing the maximum on the first and last dozens. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 06)

This excerpt from the very first chapter explains the most happening place – Casino. Le Chiffre and other characters win a considerable amount in just few hours. Sometime, they lose as well. The greed of players makes them put huge amount at stake. Many people became extremely rich by winning in Casino and many went bankrupt. Le Chiffre has been shown in the beginning to have used money that belongs to SMERSH for his own benefit. He invests the money in the business of prostitution but gets the losses. To make the money lost in the business of brothel he goes to Casino Royale. He is a good player and believes that Casino is the only place which will help him to cover the losses.

Normally the Cordon Jaune would have proved a most excellent investment and it is possible that Le Chiffre was motivated more by a desire to increase his union funds than by the hope of lining his own pocket by speculating with his employers’ money.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 12)

It was the greed of Le Chiffre which made him corrupt. This led him using his employers’ money to gain benefit. Eventually that led him to his bitter end.

6.8. Deceit:

Deceit has been underlying part of the cold war. The politics of cold war was fueled by conspiracies, counter action plans and deceptions. *Casino Royale* presents this very negative picture of the world politics. The secret agencies were involved in various plans to damage countries from the opposite group. For this various plots were devised based on deceit. The agents of opposite secret service agencies used this against each other by plotting their men or agents in administration of enemy country. Vesper was a one of the such agents who was working in British Secret Service but was serving Soviet Union by providing them secret information and helping them in their various plans. On both level, political and social deceit can be seen damaging things related to people of all the strata of society.

Out of the many sins, deceit has been the most painful and hurting emotion. People deceive each other for various reasons. Wherever the faith is, deceit is most likely to be there. Most of the time, the main reason of deceit is selfishness but sometimes it can be some ones' only option or helplessness. When deceived by the close ones it hurts a lot. In the world of politics and secret service it is very hard to believe anyone. Getting deceived in the secret service could result in the loss of life. Bond knows this very well. He doesn't believe anyone in the world. In the last few chapters, Bond forgets this rule and starts believing Vesper only to get deceived by her. After the recovering from the painful torture inflicted on him by Le Chiffre, Bond and Vesper come close. Bond knows nothing about Vesper being a double agent. Vesper very well knows that Bond has started loving her and she has gained his confidence. In the twenty four chapter of the novel, she gives hint to Bond that he doesn't know her properly.

She looked at him and smiled. Her eyes narrowed quizzically. 'You really don't know much about me,' she said suddenly. Bond was surprised by the undertone of seriousness in her voice. 'Quite enough' he said laughing. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 204)

James Bond gets surprised by this comment by Vesper, especially the tone of seriousness makes him uneasy, but he fails to sense the real identity of Vesper as a Soviet agent. Vesper is aware that she has been deceiving Bond by hiding her real identity but it seemed as if she is under pressure. When Vesper says 'You really don't know me' she wanted to reveal her secret but she could not. Bond was planning to propose Vesper the next day.

After a while he rose and walked back slowly along the beach to his *pyjama-coat*. That day he would ask Vesper to marry him. He was quite certain. It was only a question of choosing the right moment. (Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 207)

Bond starts liking Vesper and plans his retired life with Vesper. Very little he knows about the future and Vesper. He was about to get a shock and criticize himself for breaking his own rule of not believing anyone. Vesper lies to Bond in the next chapter and hides what is going on in her mind. Bond sees Vesper coming from a telephone booth and asks her what happened but Vesper avoids answering him the truth.

‘What is it, darling?’ he asked, vaguely troubled and fearing some crisis in their lives. ‘Oh,’ she said breathlessly, ‘you made me jump. It was only . . . I was just telephoning to Mathis. To Mathis,’ she repeated. ‘I wondered if he could get me another frock. You know, from that girl-friend I told you about. The vendeuse. You see,’ she talked quickly, her words coming out in a persuasive jumble, ‘I’ve really got nothing to wear. I thought I’d catch him at home before he went to the office. I don’t know my friend’s telephone number and I thought it would be a surprise for you. I didn’t want you to hear me moving and wake you up. Is the water nice? Have you bathed? You ought to have waited for me.’

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 208-9)

After being asked by Bond Vesper is not able to answer Bond properly. It could be sensed in her tone and unusual way of talking. Vesper lies to Bond that she called Mathis as she doesn’t have any clothes to wear. She changes the topic by asking Bond whether he has taken the bath or not. Bond gets suspicious in the beginning but later feels that she must have been tired.

‘It was such a surprise to see you,’ she said, trying to cover the incident up with a light touch. ‘You looked like a ghost, a drowned man, with the hair down over your eyes like that.’ She laughed harshly.

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 209)

After realizing that Vesper was a double agent, Bond could not believe at first and curses himself for not realizing it earlier. When Vesper’s letter opens her secret after her death, Bond’s feeling for her changes quickly. He sees her only as a spy.

This deceit was very painful for Bond. His anger could be seen when he reports it to London.

He was on to 'the Link', the outside liaison officer who was the only man in London he might telephone from abroad. Then, only in dire necessity. 'This is 007 speaking. This is an open line. It's an emergency. Can you hear me? Pass this on at once. 3030 was a double, working for Redland. 'Yes, dammit, I said "was". The bitch is dead now.'

(Fleming, *Casino Royale*, 229)

Bond calls Vesper bitch when he reports about Vesper being a double agent. He also informs about her death. Though Vesper started liking Bond fell in love with him but she was under pressure. She was doing everything for the life of the man whom she loved. She did not want to deceive Bond but in the SMERSH there was no room for retreat. She knew that if she reveals her identity, Bond would hate her and leave her and if she betrayed SMERSH one day she will get killed along with Bond. Bond doesn't take in account this background and wipes out his love for Vesper. He starts contemplating various clues which could have warned him earlier about Vesper, but now it was useless and the last memoire of Vesper was of a spy and betrayal.

This aspect of the novel shows how the world of politics and international cold war among various countries was taking place. Human emotions were belittled and given almost no value. The world politics was void of emotions and dominance was the only emotion ruling then the world politics.

6.9. Conclusion:

Casino Royale is one of the marvelous pieces of art that gives readers a wonderful opportunity to enjoy the thrill and suspense of a spy story. At the same time, the novel presents the grave social and political reality of the cold war period. Along with literary merits the factual presentation makes this novel an amazing work. Generally most of the novels do not comment on the social political issues directly however the present novel under study gives readers ample opportunity to understand the international politics and the way various secret operations carried out by the governments.

Casino Royale also presents a fair picture of social issues like equality for women and social male dominance. The protagonist of the novel is not the exception

to it. Though he has been presented as a talented and extra ordinary man still he carries flaws of common men. The author presents how the use of women for political and military benefits was made but secondary importance was given to the women spies ignoring their talent and capabilities. The novel revolves around a Casino and Card game which was meant for rich and powerful people where huge amount of money was at stake. For these people losing money was not the big concern as readers learn the initial chapters of the novel that many of the players at the table inherited the money and did not earn it.

Works Cited:

Black, Jermy. *'The Cold War: A Military History'*, Bloomsbury Academic India, October 2018.

Black, Harvey, *'The Black Effect'*, Silver Woods Books, UK, 2012.

Cain, Frank. *'Economic Statecraft during the Cold War: European Responses to the US Trade Embargo (Cold War History)'*, Routledge; 1 edition 19 October 2006.

Fleming, Ian. *'Casino Royale'*, Vintage publications, edition 2012.

Jude, Tony, *'Postwar: A History of Europe Since 1945'*, Vintage Digital 11 January 2011

Kennedy, Paul. *'The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers'*, William Collins 30 August 2017.

Lewis, John. *'The Cold War'*, Penguin USA; Reprint edition 26 December 2006.

Matthew, M. Aid (Editor), Cees Wiebes (Editor), *Secrets of Signals Intelligence During the Cold War: From Cold War to Globalization (Studies in Intelligence)*, Routledge; 1 edition September 2001.

McCaslin Leland C. , *'Secrets of the Cold War: Us Army Europe's Intelligence & Counterintelligence Activities Against the Soviets During the Cold War'*, Helion & Company, 15 August 2010.

McCormack, Tara. *'Britain's War Powers: The Fall and Rise of Executive Authority?'*, Palgrave Pivot 4 June 2019.

Sanderson , John B. (Author), Sanderson, Myles (Author), *'Secret Service in the Cold War: An SIS Officer from Philby to the Cuban Missile Crisis and the Balkans'*, Frontline Books 30 January 2019.

Shaw, Youngblood, Tony, Denise J. (2010). *Cinematic Cold War: The American Struggle for Hearts and Minds*. Kansas: University Press of Kansas.

Weblinks:

‘Casino Royale Chapter 20 Summary’. *Course Hero*, <https://www.coursehero.com/lit/Casino-Royale/>. Accessed 4 Oct. 2019.

‘Cold War Espionage’. *Wikipedia*, 16 Sept. 2019. *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Cold_War_espionage&oldid=916026265.

‘Cold War Influences on American Culture, Politics, and Economics’. *Shad’s Blog*, 5 Dec. 2009, <https://tradshad.wordpress.com/writings/cold-war-influences-on-american-culture-politics-and-economics/>.

‘Effects of the Cold War’. *Wikipedia*, 10 Nov. 2019. *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Effects_of_the_Cold_War&oldid=925505454

‘James Bond (Literary Character)’. *Wikipedia*, 4 Oct. 2019. *Wikipedia*, [https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=James_Bond_\(literary_character\)&oldid=919629703](https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=James_Bond_(literary_character)&oldid=919629703).

Fleming, Ian ‘Casino Royale., Vintage publications, edition 2012

Gillis, Roger. *LibGuides: Digital Humanities: What Is Digital Humanities?* <http://dal.ca.libguides.com/digitalhumanities/home>. Accessed 23 Sept. 2019.

Golson, Jordan. ‘The First Bond Car Was Actually This Monster Bentley’. *Wired*, Dec. 2014. *www.wired.com*, <https://www.wired.com/2014/12/first-bond-car-actually-monster-bentley/>.

<https://www.encyclopedia.com/social-sciences/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/women-early-mid-20th-century-1900-1960-social-and-economic-conditions>. Accessed 25 Sept. 2019.

Jasanoff, Maya. ‘Review: The Decline and Fall of the British Empire by Piers Brendon’. *The Guardian*, 20 Oct. 2007. *www.theguardian.com*, <https://www.theguardian.com/books/2007/oct/20/featuresreviews.guardianreview2>.

Lindo. ‘Literary Adaptations: Casino Royale Themes in the Book and Film’. *Literary Adaptations*, 31 May 2013, <http://litadaptations.blogspot.com/2013/05/casino-royale-themes-in-book-and-film.html>.

Women in the Early to Mid-20th Century (1900-1960): Social and Economic Conditions | Encyclopedia.Com.

CHAPTER VII --- CONCLUSION**166--182**

7.0. Introduction

7.1. *The Secret Agent*: A Perfectly Constructed Spy novel7.2. *Kim*: Kipling's Sarcastic Comments on Social, Political, Religious and Cultural Issues existing in India7.3. *The Confidential Agent*: An entertaining thriller novel7.4. *Casino Royale*: Espionage, Conspiracy and Deceit as an underling Part of the Cold War

7.5. Major Findings

7.6. Further Avenues for Research in Spy fiction

7.7. Pedagogical Implications

Works Cited

7.0. Introduction:

Chapter one is an introductory chapter in which, the researcher has discussed literature as one of the fine arts. It is a vital record what human beings have seen in life and what they have experienced in it, what they thought and felt about those aspects of it which have the most sustainable and enduring interests for all of us. The chapter contains information of the scientific development and the emergence of idealism, socialism and liberalism during the Victorian period and continued up to the end of the nineteenth century. It further contains the emergence of Capitalism and Marxism and the conflicts between two ideologies. The researcher has analyzed the causes of the conflicts between these two and the negative influences on human life in general. The researcher has taken a review of the inflicting influences of the two World Wars and decline of civilization. This chapter has prepared the background for the major themes of social, political, cultural and economic issues which have been analyzed and interpreted in the selected novels for research.

Chapter two is a theoretical framework. Every research needs some kind of theory as a basis, then the remaining study in the form of discussion, explanation, analysis and interpretation is based on. In this chapter, the researcher has extensively discussed some of the points through which he has explained the systems of 'security services' used in the past. He has also discussed the background of thriller novel. He has also discussed the beginning of the thriller novel, its later development and the present status.

The researcher has discussed the genre of spy fiction. It is also called a political thriller or spy thriller. It is a specialized type of fiction which is skillfully plotted and contains well-drawn characters, exciting actions and incidents. Spy novel includes a high degree of suspense, tensions and curiosity. It is highly authentic in all its technical details. Common themes of spy novel are conspiracy, deception, espionage, panic and it consists of a genuine threat of secret documents and information being stolen and obtained. Spy stories deal with all kinds of undercover activities in both the war and peace, from gathering of secret information at home or abroad to the active mounting of operations behind enemy lines. Necessary changes have taken place in spy fiction along with the changes in human nature, spy techniques and changes in the real world of local and international politics.

Of course, the spy stories are fictional, but they can take their traces from the real world. The spy stories first became popular in, Great Britain, because the use of

spies had been practice in England since the sixteen century. Spying is an age-old, system, but secret agent's stories are relatively new and their rises to popularity correspond with industrialization and the rise of the nation. It was a time of relatively peace and security in England. But there were threats to that peace from growing competitions among the great powers. The newly literate public imagination was newly caught by stories about international intrigues, terrorists and evil. A number of writers used spying about hostile powers in their stories.

Spy means a person, who usually gathers military, political, social and industrial information about one country for the benefit of others. The spy is supposed to have special characteristics, like James Bond, Harry Palmer. Spy fiction involves espionage as an important plot device. It was inspired by rivalries, intrigues among the major powers. It also inspired the establishment of intelligence agencies. It was given new impetus by the development of fascism and communism in the lead up to the World War II.

Spy fiction is a specialized form of a literary genre. James Fennimore Cooper's *The Spy* (1821), *The Bravo* (1831), and Rudyard Kipling's *Kim* (1901) are examples of early spy novels. There have been spies as long as there have been wars and war interests. The rise of spy novels can be associated with a perception of national insecurity in time of changing international relations. It is difficult to define the spy novel because its borders are not clear.

Spies mostly operate in an unstable and dangerous world. Knowing situation can provide other party immense advantage. The word 'espionage' means spying and from 'espioner' means to a spy. Expertise and contribution of *Kautilya*, in the field of 'Secret Services' are unchallenged. Western scholars give a credit to Chinese Sage of the fourth century B.C. with a systematic and complete study of this science. The Aryans were the pioneers in this field with secret agents mentioned in the Vedic literature in which the gods particularly Indra and Varuna are portrayed employing a band of ubiquitous agents and 'sarama' tracks down.

The techniques of state-craft recommended by *Kautilya* in *Arthashastra* still remains unchallenged. The Aryan institutions that owe their origin to mythology with the direct involvement of divine power had developed 'Secret Services' as per requirements. The concept of 'Danda' is one of the most political devices which were offered for consideration by the Indian thinkers. Along with the growth of state system, the concept of 'Danda' was implemented by the 'armed man.' Security of

people was initially as King's task. Later on, it came to armed police. For secret service, the informers were posted in rural and urban areas. The material offered by the *Ramayana* and the *Mahabharata* and the literary and technical works of pre-Christian period clearly proves a long history of 'Secret Services' in India. The origin and development of 'Secret Services' in early India, is related to the geo-political conditions of the time. These services were used when the country was made with small states to grab each other's territory and wealth. Spying was practiced in the Vedic period for the security of the state as well as to uphold the moral order and for the eradication of criminals. The spying was considered as an inseparable feature and integral part of an efficient administration and of a sound and strong foreign policy.

In *Kautilya* readers find a highly developed and complicated system of governance including an all pervasive espionage system. The *Mahabharata* refers to a mythological tradition on the origin of the dandniti and art of espionage which was handed down from the past. Deliberations of all kinds, counsels for production, the efforts of deliberations, the results of the success or failure of counsel, treatise of three kinds- bad middling and good made through fear, good, offices and gifts of wealth. The treatise of three kinds included the means of winning over persons residing in the enemy of territory, the chastisement and destruction of those were strong. It further includes the open and secret acts of persons in all places of meeting, and the continuous supervision of the behaviour of men. It is absolutely true that, no other civilization can claim such antiquity for the techniques of war, diplomacy and espionage and on such compulsive considerations.

The earliest references to the activity of Secret Agents are available in the Samhitas. Varuna and other deities of the Vedic pantheon were heavily depended on their secret agents for overseeing the activities of the people, and for taking pre-emptive measures against the dasas and dasyus. The Sanskrit dictionaries use different terms for spies of various shades depending upon the nature of work and mode of their operations. The main ingredient in all the terms used for a secret agent in his mobility and capacity to remain disguised and unobserved, moving slowly, secretly and unobserved. Amarkosa had mentioned several synonymous for secret agent. For example: apasara, chara, pranidhi, apta etc.

The present study is related to the social and political issues presented in the selected spy novels. Social issues refer to issues that influence considerable number of

individuals within a society. It is also opposed by some of individuals who undergo suffering through victimization. In some cases, social issues are the source of a conflicting opinion on the ground of what is perceived as a morally just personal life or social order. Different societies have different perceptions and normal behaviour in one society. Some significant social issues are distinguished from political issues, however, some issues have both social and political aspects.

The researcher is quite aware about socio-political analysis as a powerful instrument for understanding how countries work and what might be done to help them to work better and find out suitable solutions to solve socio-political issues and remove obstacles created by socio-political issues. The main issues, socio-political analysis searches to understand are: the interests and incentives facing different groups particularly political elites, and how these influence politics, policies, and efforts to promote social, political, economic and cultural developments and informal social, political and cultural norms interact and shape human interactions and political, economic competitions and what values and ideas matter to political, social behaviour and public policies.

There are various social and political issues which have been presented in the selected spy novels. The prominent causes of these issues are inequality, corruption, criminal attitude, communalism, illiteracy, violence against women, racism, terrorism, excessive commercialization, aggression of one nation on another nation etc. The researcher has consciously, carefully and systematically used the tool of socio-political analysis in analyzing and interpreting the selected spy novels.

7.1. *The Secret Agent*: A Perfectly Constructed Spy novel:

Chapter three is an analysis and interpretation of the social and political issues presented by Joseph Conrad in his illustrated novel entitled, *The Secret Agent*. Conrad has been acclaimed as a leading influence in the modernist movement. His all novels display a masterful narrative technique. Among the groups of modern novelists, Joseph Conrad occupies a very important place through his versatile personality and genuine as well as scholarly literary career. He has given an emphasis on salient features like social and political issues of his time while writing his novels. He actually consulted his friends like John Galsworthy, Edward Garnett. Like other prominent authors and philosophers for example, Jean Paul Sartre, Joseph Conrad suddenly attacks on the degenerating factors of civilization with careful handling of

the various themes of social, political, moral decay. He has also very consciously handled spiritual and cultural extremists, nihilists of human society.

The researcher has carefully brought out Conrad's understanding the sudden transitions in the civilizations with all its social, political, moral, ethnic and religious setups. He has carefully recorded corruptibility, chaos, nihilism and evil in his writings. He has realistically depicted the major issues of modernism in his novels through the concepts of revolution, terror, war and disaster. The researcher has highlighted themes like deception, selfishness, greediness and exploitation of marginals presented in Conrad's novels. It has been elaborately explained how Conrad has developed his own concept of individual sorrow, anxiety, through not-related to theological conception. The researcher acknowledges Conrad's full consciousness about the modernization of his time in literature.

The Secret Agent is a remarkable spy novel. In this novel, the researcher finds Conrad to some extent sympathetic for the extremist movement and his emphasis on the relations, within lower-class family in modern society. The novelist seems to investigate the possibilities of emotions in such a representative family. The novel presents a world of developed country. The important element in the background of the novel is a well-reputed city of London and in the foreground is the pathetic life of Mr. Verloc's family. Mr. Verloc, the owner of a small shop works as an agent and forwards information to a Foreign Embassy. He also works as an informer for the British Police and a member of an anarchist organization. Conrad's *The Secret Agent* is a master piece about a modern European city of London, where one seems to have a definite identity for his own. The individuals struggle for their own security and survival. All people included in the novel treat each other as means to an end, commodity of manipulation rather than as human entities. Conrad's ironic treatment extends not only to few characters but also to cover all people and institutions.

Mr. Verloc and his family live a happy life. He behaves in a political way. He tells Winnie, his wife in the form of warning to be very good to his political friends. In the beginning of the novel, *The Secret Agent* seems to be a story of lower class family without high expectations and aspirations. The setting of the novel is a home which is essential for every human being. Conrad justifies his concern that the loss of human values like love and sympathy as embodied in the person of Mr. Verloc. Social and political issues occupy the major part of the novel. Conrad in his all novels basically deals with human efforts at fraternity and solidarity, because he firmly

believes that human values play important role in establishing fraternity and solidarity in human society. The later part of *The Secret Agent* comparatively appears to be consisting of social and political issues.

The researcher has brought out the identity crisis presented in *The Secret Agent*. Mr. Verloc is the protagonist of this novel and he is connected with revolutionary people of Embassy, whereas Mr. Vladimir is an antagonist of the story and he is the real agents. The Secretary complains about Verloc's laziness and unsatisfied reporters. He closely observes Verloc's past reports and makes conclusion that he has not done anything remarkable for the last three years. Mr. Vladimir formulates disparaging remarks concerning Mr. Verloc's face and figure and argues that the business of the agent is to provoke and not to write and speak. Mr. Vladimir does not believe in any social system. Similarly, he does not like an idea of human bond through marriage and family. These are worthless for anarchists. Mr. Verloc, who believes in human values, struggles to identify his own identity. The researcher observes that *The Secret Agent* is also tragic story of identity crisis.

The researcher has further brought out the point of exploitation of marginals who are economically and socially weak. Conrad has presented two types of worlds in his *The Secret Agent*. One is the world of Verloc, a domestic, having a bond of love and affinity for one another and the second world is revolutionary, anarchy represented Mr. Vladimir. The first world consists of domestic expectations and affinity in family relationship. There is a strong bond between Verloc and Winnie and Winnie and her brother Stevie. The researcher has brought out a strong bond between Mr. Verloc and Winnie presented in *The Secret Agent*. Stevie dies and Mr. Verloc is murdered. Winnie is left alone. Her life becomes futile and meaningless after Mr. Verloc's murder and Stevie's tragic death. She feels totally alienated. She comes in contact with Ossipion, but Ossipion deceives her. Helpless Winnie finally kills herself. Winnie is presented by Conrad as an example of the feminine devotion changing into rationality. According to Conrad, social life is strange and complicated. Marginals like Winnie and Stevie feel suffocated, suppressed in strange and complicated social environment. They are exploited and are not allowed to live happily.

The researcher has minutely studied the political issues presented in *The Secret Agent*. The novel presents the seedy underworld of London's radical politics in which revolutionaries and anarchists work against mainstream western civilization.

Conrad clearly criticizes these radicals. Comrade Ossipion, Adolf Verloc, and others are the members of the radical camp. Their politics ranges from being double agents to revolutionaries to terrorists to anarchists. Mr. Verloc is lazy and conceited and politically ineffective, which causes Mr. Vladimir to demand “series of outrages” from him. Mr. Verloc works as a double agent and manages to get his brother –in-Law blown up. Michaelis spends his time in writing a voluminous incomprehensible memoir. Conrad ridicules Ossipion’s devotion to the ideas of Cesare Lombroso. He appears more interested in seducing women than in engaging politics. The professor is portrayed as the most politically committed to the group. His main aim is to blow up established society and start again. His views are tainted with his personal disappointment and his agenda seems to be largely his way of getting back at the world.

Conrad has a negative portrait of the political radicals in his *The Secret Agent*, readers may assume that he is in favour of the established governments, but he is not so. Of course, he suggests that the established governments are poor alternative to the revolutionaries and anarchists. He later on explicitly reveals his disapproval of the established governments in his portrayal of Sir Ethelred and his secretary. The political infighting and the way that Chief Inspector Heat and the Assistant Commissioner attempt to circumvent each other present a coherent efforts.

The Secret Agent is Conrad’s second political novel. It is set in the very heart of Western Civilization. The time, in which this novel was set, England was the most powerful nation on the earth, both economically and politically. Like his other political novels, Conrad has juxtaposed political issues against human issues. In *The Secret Agent*, radical and political intermingle with Verloc family’s attempts in a world in which as Winnie concludes, “things do not stand much looking into.” (Conrad, *The Secret Agent*, 136). Social circumstances dictate Winnie to make compromises on number of levels. In the plight of Winnie and her mother, readers can see Conrad’s commentary on the desperate circumstances of women, particularly working-class and middle class women. Conrad juxtaposes the political and human issues successfully. By using these two factors Conrad forces the readers to compare and contrast them. Its result is the human toll of the political activism.

The researcher observes that the main threat in *The Secret Agent* is not forwarded by an invading army but by European anarchists who had taken shelter in England from persecution on the European mainland. The anarchists believed that,

revolution could be brought about only by illegal means. Anarchism and terrorism became synonymous and entire Europe was filled with great fear. Innumerable attempts and most of them successful, were made on the lives of prominent states, men and royalty throughout Europe. The assassinations of heads of state of several European countries were attributed to anarchists. The researcher observes that the anarchists in the novel serve the function of promoting an enquiry into the prevailing climate of English public life. The political moderation of Britain serves to naturalize revolutionary activity. The researcher regarding *The Secret Agent* concludes that in Conrad's all novels the human becomes much more significant than the idea or the object. The idea of the political radicals and political conservatives fall by the wayside, while the values of human existence and struggle for human survival take priority in *The Secret Agent*.

7.2. *Kim*: Kipling's Sarcastic Comments on Social, Political, Religious and Cultural Issues existing in India:

In the chapter four, the researcher has analyzed socio-political issues. The novel, *Kim* written by Rudyard Kipling is widely-read novel in English. The researcher observes a typical India having a number of casts, religions and social inequality presented by Rudyard Kipling's in his illustrated novel, *Kim*. He opines that the development that was being brought out in then India by the imperial power was clearly to make British rule and their administration comfortable and it was never in the interests of the people. In then India, religion dominated lives of people. He has described how number of frauds so called Saints and Sadhu exploited poor people. They tried to keep them suppressed for their own interests. He finds out how some of the characters presented in the novel like a Hindu Lady express their anger against priests and young tigers. Kipling has presented some people who respect the religious personalities and offer them help in respect of religion. Superstitions were also one of the common problems associated with religious belief. It was believed that religious monks and priests have supernatural power and they can perform miracles. For example, a Jat, a Sikh man had been too many temples for his son to find a cure but gets disappointed. Finally, Kim, the protagonist who believes in science helps the boy to recover from Malaria with the help of drug kit.

In the next part of his analysis, the researcher has brought out the issues like corruption and exploitation as presented in *Kim* by Rudyard Kipling. For example,

clerks in offices and ticket issuers at railway stations were corrupt and looted ignorant people. The researcher has brought out some instances where police were equally corrupt and looted people under the threat of government actions.

The researcher clearly opines that Rudyard Kipling has always supported and justified imperial rule over the colonized states like India. He appreciates the reformations and introductions of modern facilities like train, of course, he admits that the train journey has been helpful in bringing social equality to some extent. Train journey has become a source for joining men and women of different castes and religions together. Interactions and working together of soldiers of Dorga regiment and Jat regiment presented in the novel have been analyzed and interpreted by the researcher. He has also clearly brought out women's plight existing during the imperial rule. Indian women had social and religious restrictions. He describes the hypocritical customs putting restrictions on women's liberty. He opines how women were kept in Purdah and consequently they missed the important years of their valuable life during which they should have followed their wills and do as per their aspirations. He also observes women especially old women seeking priests' blessings for sons to their daughters and daughter-in-Laws because they considered boys superior to girls. The researcher has necessarily brought out social, political and religious scenarios presented by Rudyard Kipling in the novel.

The researcher has studied *Kim* from various perspectives. He has brought out Kipling's love and respect for imperialism and British rule in the background of the novel. He has analyzed the novel, having a special place in the reader's mind as it presents a foreign perspective through native characters. He has interpreted how the novelist sarcastically comments on cultural, social, political and religious issues existing in then India. He has analyzed various religions and their doctrines, traditions and customs followed by Hindu, Muslim and Sikh people in then India. He has also rightly explained social and economic conditions of Indian people existing in then India. The researcher has correctly interpreted *Kim's* transformation from native to a white boy. He has appropriately analyzed various types of characters and their plus and minus points.

7.3. *The Confidential Agent*- An entertaining thriller novel:

In chapter five, the researcher has analyzed socio-political issues as well as an element of humanism presented in Graham Greene's entertaining thriller, *The*

Confidential Agent. Graham Greene has pointed out that his *The Confidential Agent* is an entertaining thriller and it is absolutely true. Some critics considered him as a political novelist. They give more importance to his consistent presentation of the political situations existing in the twentieth century. They accordingly give examples of his some novels to support their views. It is true that Greene has always selected background countries crushed under war or dictatorship for his novels, but this choice does not mean he desires to achieve any political benefit. In fact, such places provide him with a background to describe suffering which is an integral part of human life.

Greene's *The Confidential Agent* is a renowned thriller written in 1938 having the background of the World War II. It was a time when nations were in turmoil. The turmoil and conflict spread on a global level and it was continuously increasing to inevitability. Such kind of situation overwhelms feelings of urgency, fear, anxiety, despair and panic. A rumor causes riots, agitations and violence. Conspiracies spread everywhere. It was the perfect situation for the sensitive writers to reflect the existing turbulent situation. Greene being always sensitive could find an appropriate material for his *The Confidential Agent*. He considers this thriller an entertainment. He has successfully managed to separate these two visions.

The Confidential Agent has a hallucinatory quality and it reminds readers of Kafka. The central character of this novel, D. stumbles from one trap into another. He is terribly thwarted at each turn. His mission of getting a coal contract for his nation is seemingly almost doomed. Most of the characters in the novel experience terrible fears. Each scene proves to be risky and dangerous. The researcher feels that while writing this novel, Graham Greene must have thought of both the Spanish Civil War and the Munich Agreement. The frightening dream pictured in Greene's mind was intentionally shared. There was no remission for him from this terrible nightmare. Readers clearly experience echoes of Kafka's technique in naming his characters. The agent of the title is referred to throughout the story simply as D., while his opponent is named as L., because Greene did not wish to localise their conflict.

While studying the novel, the researcher feels that Greene had certain vague ambition in his mind to create something legendary out of contemporary thriller: the hunted man who becomes in turn the hunter, the peaceful man who turns at bay, the man who has turns at bay, the man who has learned to love justice by suffering injustice. D. the protagonist of the novel is a typical spy. Civil War and the cruel death of his wife greatly changed him. He feels a duty to his loving wife's memory. In

a previous life he was an academician, an expert on the French Knight Ronald, where story is interpreted as a tale of misguided idealism. Greene seems to say that the old myths would not work in this new materialistic world. D. is pursued and made to turn to be a hunter. He is a classic figure. He is teased and taunted by his opponent L. The irony of Greene's title is that his agent can have confidence neither in himself nor those around him. He is crackled and deceived and betrayed throughout as he makes his way around England.

The novel opens on the South coast with D.'s arrival in the country. He received kindness from chambermaid called Else, but there is no rest to him from his mission. Greene has appropriately presented all these incidents. The novel contains an unhappy situation of shootings, scapes, chases and contradictions. *The Confidential Agent* is an intriguing novel. It has given a force by the fact that conflict-within nations as well as between them continue to resound a topic now, as it ever was. In this novel, Greene has presented social and political situations. Conspiracy, deception, anxiety, panic, fear and threatening are common elements of thriller. Greene has very successfully included these features in *The Confidential Agent*. The novel reflects Greene's humanism, his feelings for and recognition of the world of man. His art is humanistic in content and universal in form.

Else is a chambermaid in the hotel where D. resides. She takes at most care of him. Else and D. have affectionate relations between them. Innocent Else is cruelly murdered by Mr. K. Her cruel death is a terrible shock to D. He plans to take a revenge on Mr. K. L. and his associates manipulate to defame and harass D. He is charged for carrying a fake passport. Of course, his passport is genuine. Later on, it was proved by the policeman that D.'s passport was genuine. This episode creates sensation. The BBC news, 'wanted by the police' given in the newspapers and television channels create sensations among readers, viewers and people in general. The posters displayed at various places and fake news regarding the love affairs between Else and forty-five year old man (D.) also creates sensations. It is an irony. In reality Else and D. are well-wishers of each other. They treat each other as father and daughter. Public interpret the news with incomplete information which becomes an entertaining element in the novel.

D.'s pursuit of Mr. K., policeman's pursuit of D., D.'s trial in the court, fake charges against D., D.'s identification parade and court scene create sensations in the minds of the readers. L.'s threatening to D. that he will be sent back to his country and

he would be killed in the bomblast during his return journey. The gangster's act of exploding shed equally make readers curious to read the novel. The episode of coal contract plays a significant role in the novel from the beginning to the end of the novel. Due to the political interferences both D. and L. fail to get the coal contract. It raises curiosity in readers mind.

One more irony – L.'s declaration of himself as university Vice- chancellor is an ironical element presented in the novel. L. in reality is devilish-minded person. University is a centre of scholarship, knowledge and civilization. If a devilish-minded person like L. is the Vice-chancellor of the educational institution, then question arises about the quality of education. What type of education will be imparted in such educational intuition to new generation relationship between Rose Cullen and D. are ideal. Rose Cullen is sensitive, well-cultured and civilized. Rose Cullen, Else, D. justice Terence Hillman are representatives of civilized society. They represent humanism. Rose Cullen has abandoned wealth and dignified social position because she is tired of mean-mindedness and excessive materialistic attitude of the coal miners and traders including her father. She genuinely loves D. for his gentlemanly quality and helps him in his various critical conditions. She visualizes that D. will be given a death punishment by the authorities therefore she denies to marry him. The end of the novel is quite touching.

As she tells him:

when you are dead, she can have you --- you'll be dead very soon: you needn't tell me that, but now --- (Greene, *The confidential Agent*, 247)

7.4. *Casino Royale*: Espionage, Conspiracy and Deceit as an underling Part of the Cold War:

Casino Royale exhibits Ian Fleming's experiences and impressions which he received during his service in British Army. It represents the bitter and cut-throat arm race between two parties to outsmart each other. The researcher has carefully brought out how the cold war left deep impact on the social, political, literacy, cultural and artistic development. Elimination of the sources of information, killing agents, spies, officers and important personalities of opposite allies were the common strategies of the cold war. The researcher argues that this novel could be studied as the product of the cold war. All the operations against the U.S.S.R. were carried out with the support from the NATO member. World economy was divided into two parts-Communism

and Capitalism. Cut-throat arm race caused the reduction of money flow to basic aspects of human beings such as education, healthcare and common welfare.

During the cold war, women were used as secret weapons for political ambitions especially in European countries and America. They were referred to as things of beauty and a warm company that men crave for. These grave social, political, cultural issues peep into *Casino Royale* illustrated novel, every now and then. Strategic conspiracies: During the cold war countries concerned came up with horrible and grave conspiracies to push forth their national agendas. These conspiracies have no limitations. *Casino Royale* presents this reality through the development of the plot of the novel. This spy novel is a story of the most dangerous and extremely talented British spy who helps the world by taking down Soviet Union's agent. Espionage, deceit, deception etc. are underlying parts of the cold war. Ian Flemings has very strategically and artistically presented these features in his *Casino Royale*. The researcher has critically interpreted these features.

7.5. Major Findings:

- Spy fiction is also called spy thriller. It is a specialized type of fiction, which is skillfully plotted and contains well-drawn characters.
- Spy fiction is a type of fiction which is concerned with various kinds of espionage, suspense, tensions, and curiosity.
- Spy means a person, who usually gathers military political, social, and industrial information about the country for the benefit of other country.
- The concept of 'Danda' is one of the most political ideas which was offered for consideration by Indian political thinkers. 'Danda' was only an old philosophical idea that was considered as an essential element of state.
- The origin and development of 'Secret Services' in early India is related to the geo-political conditions of the time, when the country was definite with small states attempting to grab each other's territory and wealth. Spying was practiced in the Vedic period for the security of the state, to uphold the moral order and for the eradication of criminals.
- Joseph Conrad occupies a very significant place through his versatile personality and scholarly literary career.
- *The Secret Agent* is Conrad's most perfectly constructed spy novel, in which,

he has skillfully combined powerful moral, social, and political issues.

- It is a story, completely written without malice. It is a new departure in genre and contains sustained efforts in ironical treatment.
- Through *The Secret Agent*, Conrad pinpoints ironically the wretched conditions of modern man who is morally and spiritually corrupt, selfish and cruel.
- Through this illustrated spy fiction, Conrad explores evil and darkness in the rapidly degenerating morally debased and fallen civilization in the wake of conservatism, social alienation and poverty.
- While studying Rudyard Kipling's spy novel, *Kim*, the researcher clearly understands that the novelist has justified the imperial rule over India. He opines that the development that was being brought out in then India by the imperial power was to make the British rule and administration comfortable and it was never for the interests of the Indian people.
- The researcher has brought out how fraud saints and sadhus exploited poor people. They tried to keep them oppressed for their own interests. Superstitions were a problem associated with religious belief. People believed that religious monks and priests have supernatural power and they perform miracles.
- The researcher has analyzed social issues like corruption and exploitation of common people by the ticket issuers, clerks and policemen presented in *Kim*.
- He has also analyzed the social issues like social and religious restrictions on women, hypocritical customs of putting restrictions on women's liberty. He has further analyzed how women were kept in purdah and deprived from using their wills and fulfilling their desires and aspirations.
- The researcher has interpreted *Kim* having a special place in the reader's mind. It presents a foreign perspective through native characters. He has brought out how Kipling sarcastically comments on the issues like social, cultural and political existing during the imperial rule.
- Graham Greene's *The Confidential Agent* is an entertaining thriller novel was written in 1939.
- It was a time when nations were in turmoil. The turmoil and conflict spread on a global level and it was increasing continuously to inevitability. This was the

right kind of background for Greene to describe suffering which is an integral part of human life.

- *The confidential Agent* has an hallucinatory quality and it reminds readers of Kafka. D. is the central character of this novel. He stumbles from one trap into another. He is terribly thwarted at each turn. His mission of getting a coal contract for his country is seemingly almost doomed. Most of the characters experience terrible fears. Each scene in the novel proves to be risky and dangerous. In this novel, Greene has skillfully presented fear, threatening, anxiety, conspiracy, deception etc., which are common elements of the thriller novel.
- D.'s pursuit of Mr. K., policeman's pursuit of D., D.'s trial in the court, fake charges against D. and his identification parade, the court scene, the BBC's news 'Wanted by the police' and the news given in the newspapers and television channels create sensations in the minds of readers, views and public in general.
- *Casino Royale* accurately represents fatal and cut-throat arm race between two parties to outsmart each other. It forced the nations to keep basic aspects of human beings such as education, healthcare, and common welfare aside.
- Elimination of the sources of information, killing agents, spies, officers and important persons of opposite allies were common strategies of the cold war.
- During the cold war, countries concerned came up with horrible and grave strategic conspiracies to push forth their national agendas. These conspiracies have no limitations. Ian Fleming's realistic presentation of these features has been critically analyzed in the present research.
- This illustrated spy novel is a story of the most dangerous and extremely talented British spy who helps the world by taking down Soviet Union's agent.
- Espionage, conspiracy, deceit, deception, exploitation, human cruelties are underlying parts of the cold war. Ian Fleming has skillfully presented these features in *Casino Royale*.

7.6. Further Avenues for Research in Spy fiction:

Spy fiction is a specialized type of fiction. Literature is a representation, mirror, and interpretation of an existing social, political, economic, religious, cultural etc. lives. Human life is complicated. It goes on constantly changing. The transitory and transforming nature of human life provides creative writers with suitable situations to inspire them to create literary works as per the requirement of an existing situation. Twentieth century had seen two world wars which were followed by the cold war. Espionage, conspiracy, deceit, exploitation, cruelty are common elements of the cold war. There are no limitations to these elements. Psychological war, cyber war, nuclear wars are encroaching human life. Their peeping into human life will cause different kind of social, political, cultural issues. Naturally, there will be enough scope for further research in this area.

7.7. Pedagogical Implications:

The present study will undoubtedly be helpful to the teachers teaching spy novels at the undergraduate as well as at the postgraduate levels. The analysis and interpretations given in the present research will definitely guide them in analyzing and interpreting spy novels in the best interests of their students. The present research will also be helpful to the students studying spy novels prescribed for their study.

BIBLIOGRAPHY**183-187****Primary Sources:**

- Conrad, J. *The Secret Agent*, London, Penguin Popular Classics, 1994.
- Fleming, I. *Casino Royale*, London, Jonathan Cape Publishers, 1953.
- Greene, G. *The Confidential Agent*, London, William Heinemann Publication, 1939.
- Kipling, R. *Kim*, United Kingdom, (Croydon), Transatlantic Press book, printed by CPI group, 1901.

Secondary Sources:

- Abrams, M. H. *A Handbook Of Literary Terms Inver*. 2009.
- Albert, Edward. *History of English Literature*. 1979.
- Albert, Edward. *History of English Literature*. 1979.
- Allen, Charles. *Kipling Sahib: India and the Making of Rudyard Kipling 1865-1900*. Hachette UK, 2015.
- Anderson, *Sidelights on the Home Rule Movement*, P.127.
- Anderson, Sir R. *Sidelights on the Home Rule Movement*. 1907.
- Berolzheimer, Fritz. *The World's Legal Philosophies*. The Lawbook Exchange, 1929.
- Bivona, Daniel. 'Conrad's Bureaucrats: Agency, Bureaucracy and the Problem of Intention', *NOVEL –A Forum of Fiction*, Vol.26, No.2 (Winter, 1993), P.164.
- Black, Harvey, 'The Black Effect', Silver Woods Books, UK, 2012.
- Black, Jermy. 'The Cold War: A Military History', Bloomsbury Academic India, October 2018.
- Cain, Frank. 'Economic Statecraft during the Cold War: European Responses to the US Trade Embargo (Cold War History)', Routledge; 1 edition 19 October 2006.
- Campbell, James S. *Law and order reconsidered*. 1969.
- Chatterjee, Hiralal. *International Law and Inter-state Relations in Ancient India*. 1958.
- Cœdès, George. *The Indianized States of South-East Asia*. U of Hawaii P, 1968.
- Conrad, J. *The Secret Agent*, London, Penguin Popular Classics, 1994.
- Conrad, Joseph, and J. H. Stape. *Notes on Life and Letters*. Cambridge UP, 2004.
- Conrad, Joseph. *The Secret Agent*. Collector's Library, 2005.
- Daleski, H.M. Joseph Conrad: *The Way of Dispossession* (1977), P.155.

- Daleski, Herman M., and Hillel M. Daleski. *Joseph Conrad, the Way of Dispossession*. Holmes & Meier, 1976.
- David Garnett, *The Golden Echo*, (London), 1954, P. 10-14.
- Deacon, Richard. *A History of the Chinese Secret Service*. Muller, 1974.
- Dvornik, Francis. *Origins of Intelligence Services: The Ancient Near East, Persia, Greece, Rome, Byzantium, the Arab Muslim Empires, the Mongol Empire, China, Muscovy*. Rutgers UP, 1974.
- Encyclopaedia Britannica*. 1973.
- Fleming, Ian. 'Casino Royale', Vintage publications, edition 2012.
- Garnett, Edward. 'Unsigned Review' *Nation* (Sept.28, 1907) Reprinted in *Conrad: The Critical Heritage*,) 1973) (Sherry Norman ed.), P.194.
- Garnett, David. *The Golden Echo: The golden echo*. 1953.
- Green, Roger L. *Kipling: the Critical Heritage*. Routledge Kegan & Paul, 1971.
- Greene, Graham, and Marie-Françoise Allain. *The Other Man: Conversations with Graham Greene*. Penguin UK, 1984.
- Greene, Graham. *The Confidential Agent*. Open Road Media, 2018.
- Greene, Graham. *The Confidential Agent*. Open Road Media, 2018.
- Greene, Graham. *Ways of Escape*. Random House, 2011.
- Greene, Graham. *The Collected Edition: The confidential agent*. 1971.
- Greene, Graham. *The Power and the Glory*. Random House, 2010.
- Griffiths, Sir P. *To Guard My People: The History of the Indian Police*. 1971.
- Gupta, Ram K. *Political Thought in the Smṛti Literature*. 1969.
- Jean- Aubry, *Life and Letters, II*, 322.
- Jean- Aubry, *Life and Letters, II*, 60. And Elbridge L. Adams, Joseph Conrad: *The Man New York*, 1925, P.55
- Jeremy, Hawthorne. Joseph Conrad: *Language and Self Consciousness*, London: Edward Arnold Publisher, 1979, Print.P.77.
- Jude, Tony, 'Postwar: *A History of Europe Since 1945*', Vintage Digital 11 January 2011
- Kāṇḍe, Pāṇḍuraṅga V. *History of Dharmasastra: (ancient and Mediaeval Religious and Civil Law in India)*. 2006.
- Kennedy, Paul. 'The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers', William Collins 30 August 2017.
- Kipling, R. *Kim: High Interest Classics with Comprehension Activities*. EDCON

Publishing Group, 2003.

Kipling, Rudyard. *Kim: High Interest Classics with Comprehension Activities*. EDCON Publishing Group, 2003.

Kipling, Rudyard. *The Kipling Reader Selections from the Books of Rudyard Kipling*. tredition, 2012.

Lewis, John. *'The Cold War'*, Penguin USA; Reprint edition 26 December 2006.

Matthew, M. Aid (Editor), Cees Wiebes (Editor), *Secrets of Signals Intelligence During the Cold War: From Cold War to Globalization* (Studies in Intelligence), Routledge; 1 edition September 2001.

McCaslin Leland C. , *'Secrets of the Cold War: Us Army Europe's Intelligence & Counterintelligence Activities Against the Soviets During the Cold War'*, Helion & Company, 15 August 2010.

McCormack, Tara. *'Britain's War Powers: The Fall and Rise of Executive Authority?'*, Palgrave Pivot 4 June 2019.

Paranjpe, Shrikant. "Is There Need for A Comprehensive Legislation to deal with matters of Internal Security." *Internal security in India*, 1st ed., Indus Source Books, 2014, pp. 130,133.

Rapson, Edward J., et al. *The Cambridge History of India*. CUP Archive, 1957.

Renou, Louis. *The Civilization of Ancient India*. 1959.

Saletore, Bhasker A. *Ancient Indian Political Thought and Institutions*. New York, Asia Publishing House, 1963.

Saletore, Bhasker A. *Ancient Indian Political Thought and Institutions*. New York, Asia Publishing House, 1963.

Sanderson , John B. (Author), Sanderson, Myles (Author), *'Secret Service in the Cold War: An SIS Officer from Philby to the Cuban Missile Crisis and the Balkans'*, Frontline Books 30 January 2019.

Sergeant, David. *Kipling's Art of Fiction 1884-1901*. Oxford UP, 2013.

Shaw, Youngblood, Tony, Denise J. (2010). *Cinematic Cold War: The American Struggle for Hearts and Minds*. Kansas: University Press of Kansas.

Smith, Vincent A. *The Early History of India*. Atlantic Publishers & Dist, 1999.

Subrahmanian, N. *Śaṅgam Polity: The Administration and Social Life of the Śaṅgam Tamils*. 1996.

Subrahmanian, N. *Śaṅgam Polity: The Administration and Social Life of the Śaṅgam Tamils*. 1996.

Sullivan, Zohreh T. *Narratives of Empire: The Fictions of Rudyard Kipling*. Cambridge UP, 1993.

The Brihadaranyaka Upanishad: Sanskrit Text, English Translation, and Commentary. 1985.

Trivedi, S. D. *Secret Services in Ancient India: Techniques and Operation*. 1988.

Tzu, Sun. *The Art of War*. Race Point Publishing, 2017.

Watt, Ian. *Essays on Conrad*. Cambridge UP, 2000.

Wise, David, and Thomas B. Ross. *The Espionage Establishment*. Jonathan Cape, 1968.

Web-links:

"A Brief History of the Spy Fiction Genre." *Toledo Lucas County Public Library*, www.toledolibrary.org/blog/a-brief-history-of-the-spy-genre.

"Effects of the Cold War." *Wikipedia, the Free Encyclopedia*, Wikimedia Foundation, Inc, 17 Jan. 2010, en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Effects_of_the_Cold_War. Accessed 20 september 2020.

"Kim." *E Notes*, www.enotes.com/topics/kim.

"Kim." *Wikipedia, the Free Encyclopedia*, Wikimedia Foundation, Inc, 30 Apr. 2004, en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Kim. Accessed 20 october 2020.

"The Secret Agent." *Wikipedia, the Free Encyclopedia*, Wikimedia Foundation, Inc, 13 Jan. 2021, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Secret_Agent. Accessed 23 September 2020.

'CasinoRoyaleChapter20Summary'. *CourseHero*, <https://www.coursehero.com/lit/Casino-Royale/>. Accessed 4 Oct. 2019.

'Cold War Espionage'. *Wikipedia*, 16 Sept. 2019. *Wikipedia*, 'Cold War Influences on American Culture, Politics, and Economics'. *Shad's Blog*, 5 Dec. 2009, <https://tradshad.wordpress.com/writings/cold-war-influences-on-american-culture-politics-and-economics/>.

'Effects of the Cold War'. *Wikipedia*, 10 Nov. 2019. *Wikipedia*, 'James Bond (Literary Character)'. *Wikipedia*, 4 Oct. 2019. *Wikipedia*, [https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=James_Bond_\(literary_character\)&oldid=919629703](https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=James_Bond_(literary_character)&oldid=919629703).

Fleming, Ian 'Casino Royale., Vintage publications, edition 2012

Gillis, Roger. *LibGuides: Digital Humanities: What Is Digital Humanities?*

[//dal.ca.libguides.com/digitalhumanities/home](http://dal.ca.libguides.com/digitalhumanities/home). Accessed 23 Sept. 2019.

Golson, Jordan. 'The First Bond Car Was Actually This Monster Bentley'. *Wired*, Dec. 2014. www.wired.com, <https://www.wired.com/2014/12/first-bond-car-actually-monster-bentley/>.

<https://www.encyclopedia.com/social-sciences/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/women-early-mid-20th-century-1900-1960-social-and-economic-conditions>. Accessed 25 Sept. 2019.

Jasanoff, Maya. 'Review: The Decline and Fall of the British Empire by Piers Brendon'. *The Guardian*, 20 Oct. 2007. www.theguardian.com, <https://www.theguardian.com/books/2007/oct/20/featuresreviews.guardianreview2>.

Lindo. 'Literary Adaptations: Casino Royale Themes in the Book and Film'. *Literary Adaptations*, 31 May 2013, <http://litadaptations.blogspot.com/2013/05/casino-royale-themes-in-book-and-film.html>.

Women in the Early to Mid-20th Century (1900-1960): Social and Economic Conditions | Encyclopedia.Com.